



Richard Benyon Esq.^r
Englefield House,
Reading - Berks.

15/6



Richard Benyon Esq.^r
Englefield House,
Reading - Berks.

15/6

4-6

12570aaaa 26

THE
ADVENTURES
AND
AMOURS

OF THE
Marquis *de NOAILLES*,

AND
Mademoiselle *TENCIN*.



K *Brown (7. de)*
THE
ADVENTURES
AND
AMOURS
OF THE

Marquis *de* NOAILLES,

AND

Mademoiselle TENCIN.

Translated from a FRENCH MANUSCRIPT.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

L O N D O N :

Printed for J. ROBINSON, in *Ludgate-Street.*

M.DCC.XLVI.

THE
ADVENTURES
AND
AMOURS
OF THE
MISTRESS OF WOODVILLE
AND



Transcribed from a
manuscript in the
British Museum

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOL. I.

LONDON:

Printed for J. Robinson, in Lambeth-Street

MDCCLXXV



P R E F A C E,

B Y T H E

T R A N S L A T O R.

IT is no easy Matter, whatever some People may think or say, to keep up, in a Translation, to the Spirit of the Original, particularly in Pieces of Wit and Gallantry. Our *English* Language is, no doubt, as capable of lively, soft, and delicate, Expressions, as the *French*; and yet when a Man, who is a competent Judge, compares some *French* Originals with their Translations, he often finds the lively, brisk, *French* Story, metamorphosed into a dull, languid, *English* Narration; and as the Generality of Readers have no Opportunity, and perhaps no Capacity, of judging whether the Fault lies at the Author's, or at the

Translator's, Door, they are apt to throw by the Translation, and to curse the *French* Blockhead who wrote the Original.

I AM not so vain as to imagine I have more Skill this Way than my Neighbours ; on the contrary, I believe there are Translators in *England* who would have done as much Justice to this *French* Manuscript as I can pretend to. The Ladies in most Countries, who are (if I may be allowed the Expression) *Sisters of the Quill*, have, I don't know how, such an easy, soft, and unaffected, Stile, that, to catch hold of it, a Translator must lay aside all his masculine Elegance, and studied Expressions. How far I have succeeded in imitating, by the Force of Study, what was the free Gift of Nature in our *French* Female-Writer, is more than I can tell, and to submit it to the Judgment of the Public (the common Cant of Authors and Translators in their Prefaces) would be quite absurd in the

P R E F A C E. vñ

present Case, as the Manuscript has not as yet been in the Hands of any Printer: The Reader therefore must be so good, on this Occasion, even to pin his Faith, upon my Assurance, that no Pains have been spared, so far as the different Idioms of Languages will allow, to come up to the Spirit of the Original.

BUT may not some say, *who don't chuse to buy a Pig in a Poke*, Why did not this Translator lay the *French Manuscript*, with his Version, before *such a Man* as Mr. LOCKMAN, *whose translating Genius is admired by the Public, and whose Approbation would have at once satisfied the Diffident, and greatly promoted the Sale of the Book?* I would only beg Leave, by Way of Answer, to observe that, had I done this, Mr. Lockman, perhaps out of Vanity, would have found many Faults, which I should have been obstinate enough, probably from the same Motive, to defend; so, instead of doing my Translation Service

vice

vice, I should, very likely, have been forced into a Paper War, which, of all Things, I would chuse to avoid. Besides, as Delays and Revivals are terrible Things to Translators, who seldom happen to be over-loaded with Cash, the pretty Manner of delivering a few Sheets of Copy into the Printer's Hand on a *Saturday Night*, for which *he's down with the Dust*, is a most convenient Way of Dealing, and makes us Drudges go thro' our Work with chearful Hearts. —

This by way of Digression. — I shall now beg Leave to acquaint the Reader, that *Mademoiselle de Biron*, of a very ancient and noble Family in *France*, is the Lady to whom the World is obliged for *The ADVENTURES and AMOURS of the Marquis de Noailles and Mademoiselle Tencin*, I mean as Author only, for the Obligation of their appearing in Print is owing to *Madame de Chauvelin*, Lady to a late *French* Minister of State. This Lady knowing that her Friend Miss *Biron*

P R E F A C E. ix

Biron was not only Miss *Tencin's* *Confidante*, but also that she had committed to Paper her whole Story, never ceased her Sollicitations till she obtained a Sight of the Manuscript, which at last Miss *Biron* consented to, upon Condition, however, that no Mortal but herself should see it, which was promised, and actually performed; but as she thought it was a Pity to deprive the World of so curious an Instance of Love and Constancy under the most cruel Persecutions and Tryals, after her Friend's Death she transcribed the Manuscript with her own Hand, and gave what she had wrote to the *Chevalier de Belleisle*, and he to a young Nobleman his Friend in *London*, who did me the Honour to put it into my Hands, on Condition that I should publish a Translation of it.

As there was a Copy of Miss *Biron's* Letter to *Madame de Chauvelin* when she sent her the Manuscript, I thought I could

could not conclude this Preface with any thing so interesting as a Translation of it.

Copy of a LETTER from Miss
Biron to Madame de Chauvelin.

MADAM,

THOUGH I am fully persuaded that you must, in your Heart, condemn me for Breach of Trust, and look upon me as a Fool, into the Bargain, to pretend to write, yet such is your Power over me, that neither the Guilt of Treachery, nor the ridiculous Light in which I must appear, are prevalent enough to make me withstand your last Attack. ——— Here then is the long-wish'd-for Manuscript, in which you'll find, I hope, notwithstanding my dull Stile, what will agreeably entertain you; but, O! how beautiful would some Passages appear, could your Ladyship be prevailed on to employ your delicate Pen; this would make me forget
the

P R E F A C E. xi

the Faux-pas I am now guilty of to oblige you, and rejoice that my Stupidity had rouz'd up the brightest Genius of the Age to paint, in true Colours, the most surprising Scene that ever appear'd on the Stage of Life. We see in this History Cruelty and Malice laying deep Schemes and Plots against Virtue and Innocence, and when all Hopes seem to be lost, at once the Scene, by an invisible providential Power, changes, and our distressed Lovers are saved from Shipwreck; and were it not a Pity, Madam, were the Subject is so noble, the Sentiments so grand, the Incidents so surprising, and in short, the whole Story so singular and moving, to have it murdered by a languid and lifeless Narration! I must insist upon your Compliance as a Recompence for my forfeited Honour; this is a Motive you cannot, in Justice, get over; but if I should be mistaken, and find that neither this nor Friendship can prevail, that you may
have

*have no Peace of Mind, nor get a sound
Sleep till you fall about it, is the hearty
Prayer of*

Yours, &c.

Felicité de Biron.

*P. S. Remember you are not to shew the
Manuscript to any Mortal.*



T H E



T H E
 ADVENTURES
 A N D
 A M O U R S
 O F T H E
 Marquis *de NOAILLES*,
 A N D
 Mademoiselle *TENCIN*.

WHEN first the Whim entered my Brain of commencing Adventure-Writer, I hug'd myself with the pleasing Fancy of drawing such a hideous Picture of cruel and tyrannical Parents, that I thought every Moment lost which was not employ'd upon that grand Design ; not altogether, I must honestly confess it, out of Compassion to the Sufferings of

VOL. I. B the

the poor *Marquis de Noailles* and his lovely Mistress, tho' their Case deserved my tenderest Pity, my own Misfortunes started up from the Grave of Oblivion, and cry'd with the Voice of Thunder, *Dip thy Pen in Gall, and lash, without Mercy, the cruel Authors of thy own Being, as well as those of thy distressed Friends.* In my delirious Fits, I did not at all consider that what dropt from my Pen, as it never was intended to be made public, could be of no Use to the World; this Reflection, in some of my lucid Intervals, made me more than once throw it by, but still some *je ne sçai quoi* made me take it up again, and write strange, very strange Things, which, if ever they come to Light, by some Accident that I cannot now foresee, will, in my own Case, as well as that of my unhappy Friends, set Parents in a most ridiculous Light, who only consult their own Caprice in the Disposal of their Children. But I don't consider that insensibly I am getting into the dry moralizing Strain, which, of all Things, I abominate; but I'll soon put a Stop to my Career that Way, by entering, without further Ceremony, or Preamble, upon the Abridgment of my own Life, which will not detain me long from the more curious Story

ry

ry of my Friends : Here, indeed, I resolve to be mighty exact ; I mean not to omit the least trifling Circumstance of their Amours. As for Order, Elegance of Stile, and all that, I am very indifferent about it, not because I am a Woman, tho' that's a good Reason, but because I have no body to please but myself; and, Thanks to my Vanity, that seldom misses.

YOUR Adventure-Writers, whether real, or imaginary, generally begin with a pompous Enumeration of a long Race of illustrious Ancestors, which I hate so heartily, that if I had not, now and then, Occasion to have a Fling at my Father's obstinate Temper, I should scarce name him, and far less my Grand-father the *Count de Biron*, a pretty Gentleman, as my Mother has often told me, but unluckily taking the wrong Side of the Question in Government Affairs, the King thought fit to take off his Head, which so frighten'd my Father, that, tho' he had as much Ambition as another, he chose a Country Life, and to keep his Head upon his Shoulders. My Mother was an Heiress, brought a tolerable Fortune into the Family, and (allowing for her being more Priest-ridden than, I think, any Woman of

Sense ought to be, and lavish to Profusion in her charitable Presents to canting Monks and Fryars) had Accomplishments sufficient to make a Husband happy; and I don't remember they ever had any jangling Work, but upon Account of my Father's not shewing that Respect, which she, out of her bigotted Zeal, thought due to these frock'd Animals, whom I wished well foused in Purgatory for the many Whipping-Bouts which I underwent in my younger Days, by their Direction, and the ill Treatment I received from my Parents, when I was no more a Child; because I not only rejected, with Disdain, the Addresses of one of those abandon'd Wretches, but, upon his persevering, made a Complaint to my Father, which neither he, nor my Mother, would give the least Credit to, being firmly persuaded that he was a Saint upon Earth, so artfully the luscious Hypocrite managed their Credulity. The fairest Words I had from them were Slanderer, Impostor, and a strict Charge never to open my Mouth more upon the Subject. Very well, thought I, here's Priestcraft with a Witness. ——— Bless thy Stars, poor *Biron*, that there's no Inquisition in this Kingdom, for if there were, thither must thou have been by
this

this Time transported, and exposed to all the Indignities of those Mansions of Horror, for accusing the most pious and sanctified Father *Dominick*, whom all the holy Matrons in the Parish worship, and whom I know to be a Wolf in Sheep's Cloathing, a downright Devil; but Providence soon brought his Wickedness to Light, and I had the Pleasure of being fully revenged.

OUR gallant Fryar, finding he could make no Hand with such a giddy-headed Girl as my Ladyship, wisely withdrew, and planted his Battery against a Fort not so impregnable. And to make a long Story short, after a few Days close Siege to an honest Shop-keeper's Wife in a neighbouring Village, a Capitulation was signed, and General *Dominick* put in Possession; but as ill Luck would have it, our Inamorato was so intoxicated with his new Conquest, and Madam so fond of her rosy-cheek'd Son of *St. Francis*, that her Husband, though no Conjuror, God knows, began to smell a Rat, and resolved not only to watch them himself, but also to call into his Assistance the good old Woman his Nurse, in whose Fidelity and Penetration he placed an intire Confidence. In

a Council held, it was resolved that, as Nurse's little Chamber was next to the Husband and Wife's Bed-Room, a Hole bored in the Deal-Board Partition, thro' which the old Woman was to peep when the Confessor was exhorting his Penitent, would be a certain Method of discovering whether his Suspicions were just. It was not long before an Opportunity offered ; for Father *Dominick* was a very warm Lover, and could not bear long Absence. Next Morning he did not fail to come, or, to speak more properly, he flew on the Wings of Love, and with the Authority of a spiritual Director, demanded a private Interview with the Mistress of the House, which was no sooner ask'd than granted ; for tho' we are not in this Kingdom so absolute Slaves to the Clergy as in some neighbouring Countries, yet our Doors must by no Means be shut against the Directors of our Consciences ; and a Husband may look sour, bite his Lip, and express his Discontent, yet still the Holy Father must be admitted, or he may expect to be persecuted, without Mercy, by the Ecclesiastical Court ; which, to the Regret of all People of Sense, has still more Power than it deserves, or makes good Use of. Among other Abuses, which the blind Zeal of
our

our Fore-fathers made them tamely submit to, this was one which the late Duke of *Orleans* intended to reform; but that great Prince was snapt from us before his Project was ripe for Execution, to the great Joy not only of this arbitrary domineering Court, but also of the whole Clergy in general, whose Wings he intended to clip for the Benefit of Mankind. Were I writing what was design'd for public View, I ought, in the Strain of other Authors, to beg Pardon when I fall into Digressions, but I have quite a different Notion, for I think them absolutely necessary, now and then, were it for nothing else but to give the Reader a little Breathing, and to recover his Spirits quite exhausted with a long-winded uniform Narration; and I am supported in this Opinion by no less a Man than *Marivaux*, who is allowed to be the genteelest Writer in *France*: But though I had no such Authority, I would, without any Ceremony, break off the Thread of my Story, when, and where, I thought proper, and take it up again when I found myself tired with Digression; and as this is just now the Case, I return to Father *Dominick* stepping into Madam's Bed-chamber, where he scarce had mumbled o'er a *Pater* and an *Avé*, when Mother *Marjory* was

was planted at the Peeping-Hole, where she not only saw herself, but also brought her Master time enough to see, what I don't think proper to describe. The poor hornified Merchant instead of running to Sword and Dagger, in Imitation of a hot-brain'd *Spanish* Don in his first Transport, resolved to punish the guilty Couple without dipping his Hands in Blood, and therefore laid his Commands on *Marjory* to take no Notice of what had passed, till he should let her know his Intentions. After much Deliberation, he at last fix'd on this Scheme: To pretend a Necessity of going to *Paris* in Order to buy some Goods, which he wanted for his Shop; and when he mentioned it to his Wife, and told her that he would be absent for a Week, he could observe Joy sparkling in her Eyes on the Prospect of a more agreeable Bedfellow than a lifeless dull Husband. He resolved to conceal himself in a Brother's House in the same Village, to whom he imparted his Misfortune, and order'd old Nurse, who could see thro' her Hole, by the Help of Candle-Light, when the Monk was arrived, to come and acquaint him. Madam did not fail, so soon as her Husband had mounted his Horse, to send a *Billet-doux* to her

her Gallant, at his Convent about half a Mile distant from the Village, which, with his Answer, found in their Pockets, and made public with the rest of their Intrigue, I chuse to put down here (tho' scarce in their proper Place) for no other Reason that I know of, but that it is my Will and Pleasure, and that I am resolved, as I have already declared, not to confine myself to Order.

Mrs. Vimont to Father Dominick.

MY Husband is gone to Paris, where he intends to remain eight Days.——O! how I hug myself with the ravishing Pleasure of your edifying Conversation, without the killing Fears of Interruption.——My Back-Window, which you know is of easy Access, shall be open for your Reception when all's hush in the House; and if you can contrive it so as to deceive the Vigilance of your old sly Superior, we may pass this and some other happy Nights together. Adieu thou best of Men.—— I am all Impatience till I know, by your Answer, whether I am this Night to have the Pleasure of seeing you.

Father

Father Dominick's Answer to Mrs. Vimont.

AS it is the Duty of a Confessor to be always ready on a Call, and as your Case seems to be urgent, you may expect me after Mattins are over, and you may be assured that nothing shall be wanting on my Part to give you Comfort. Believe me, my dear Sister, I am on Racks and Tortures 'till I be with you; but as we have an extraordinary Office to perform at Midnight, where the whole Community must assist, it will be one o'Clock in the Morning before I reach your House.—Take Care that I meet with no Interruption in the Course of my Exhortations, which I hope will operate upon you successfully; and till the happy Moment brings us together, pray earnestly that your ghostly Father may be enabled to perform his Duty with Vigour, and Efficacy, which is all I shall add, but that I am entirely my dear Sister's in the Bonds of Christian Love and Charity.

ABOUT two o'Clock came hobling to the Gate old Nurse quite out of Breath, and, with half a Dozen *Jesu Maria's* and as many Signs of the Cross, declared, with Tears in her Eyes, that

that this Devil of a Monk was in Bed half an Hour ago with her Mistress, and by this Time had planted half a Score of Horns upon her poor Master's Head. Moderate your Transport, *Marjory*, said Master *Vimont*, I shall be up with them by and by ; and then turning to his Brother, my Design, said he, is to go to my Father-in-law's, to raise him and his two Sons out of Bed, and conduct them to my House, where they shall see my prostitute Wife in the Arms of this adulterous Fryar. I hope, Brother, continued he, you'll not only go along with me yourself, but likewise order your Son and some of your Servants to attend you, that there may be no Penury of Witnesses. I fancy by the Time we get her Father and her Brothers rouzed, the Monk and my blessed Wife, will be taking their first Nap ; and as I have a Pass-Key that opens all the Doors in the House, and can do it very softly, I doubt not but we shall be at the Bed's Side, before they know any thing of the Matter. The Brother seemed to be as much enraged, and as forward as the Husband ; so calling up his Son and Servants, they went, in a Posse, to the Father-in-law's, where all the Family were in a profound Sleep, but the loud knocking at the Gate,

at

at last awoke the Master, who, opening the Window, called to know, What insolent People dared to come and disturb his Family at such an unseasonable Hour? His Son-in-law (whose Voice he immediately knew) told him, in a very melancholy Tone, That his Wife, being suddenly taken ill, and but little Hopes of her Recovery, had desired, as her last Request, that he would go himself and acquaint her Father and Brothers, that she earnestly desired to see them before she left the World, which in all Probability must soon be the Case. The Father greatly alarm'd, for he loved this Daughter more than any of his Children, immediately called up his Sons, who were in a Moment dressed and ready to attend him. As they were going along with the Husband, and the rest of the Company, the Father ask'd many Questions about his Daughter's Distemper, and expressed the greatest Concern for a Child, whom, as I have already said, he dearly loved, and who had never given him the least Cause of Discontent. When they arrived at Mr. *Vimont's*, and Candles were lighted, they went strait to the pretended sick Woman's Door, which the Husband opening softly, the Chamber

ber was directly filled. His next Motion was to draw aside the Bed-Curtains, and one may easily judge how strangely the Lady's Father, and all the other Spectators, who knew nothing of the Intrigue, were surpris'd to see, instead of a Woman in the last Agonies of Death, Father *Dominick* and Mrs. *Vimont* lockt in one another's Arms and fast asleep. The Father, struck as with a Thunder-bolt, gave a terrible Shout, which awoke our Lovers, who were, no Doubt, astonish'd more than can be express'd, or even imagin'd. — The Monk, after rubbing his Eyes and looking round the Room for some Time, at last, thus address'd himself to the Husband.

SIR, the Situation you find me in may justly enough alarm you; and, indeed, were a Judgment to be formed upon Appearances, not only you, but also all the People here present, are intitled to entertain a very bad Opinion of Persons found together naked in a Bed; but the Lady's Character, as well as Mine, deserves, at least, your patient Attention to what I have to say in her, and my own, Vindication, and thereafter, I hope, you'll look upon us both

in quite a different Light from what you now do.

I BELIEVE some others here, as well as you, Sir, are not ignorant that I have had, for some Years, the Direction of this Lady's Conscience, which has given me no small Trouble and Concern upon some Occasions; not that she has been guilty, in reality, of enormous Crimes, but sometimes imprudent in putting her Virtue to strange Tryals. You know, Sir, continu'd he, that both your Spouse and you have often lamented the Want of Children, and that, as often as this was the Subject of our Conversation, I exhorted you both to double your Diligence in the Practice of Virtue and Piety, the only Means of obtaining from the Bounty of Heaven what you so much wish'd for; but that if Providence, for wise Ends above our Reach, did not think fit to grant your Desires, in that Case it was your Duty to submit, and to bear your disappointed Hopes with a perfect Resignation. Some Time since your Spouse sent me Word, that she wanted to see me upon an Affair of Consequence, which would admit of no Delay. I left the Convent directly, and came to know what was the Matter, but you may judge

judge of my Surprize when she spoke to me in the following Manner.

FATHER *Dominick*, said she, were I not convinced of your Discretion and Probity so much as I am, no Consideration upon Earth should tempt me to lay my Heart open to you in the Manner I am now going to do ; but as I am perfectly satisfied upon that Side, and that, upon the other Hand, my Husband's, as well as my own, Happiness, depend upon the Execution of my Project, I shall, without any Scruple, communicate it to you, and if you can, with a safe Conscience, as I think you may, act the Part which I would propose, my Wishes, I hope, will be accomplish'd.

You may remember that, in all your Exhortations, you told me, the only Way to make Heaven favourable to my Wishes of having Children, was to perform all the Christian Duties in the strictest Manner. You have likewise told me, that mortifying the Flesh, and resisting strong Temptations, were meritorious in the Sight of God, and would infallibly procure a Blessing from above. If this be so, as I don't in the least doubt, it is

in your Power, to give me an Opportunity of doing a noble and meritorious Action, for which Heaven will, no Doubt, reward me in making me the Mother of Children : But before I come to the Point, I must acquaint you, not without Confusion and Blushes, that your external Form is not less dear to me than your inward Qualifications. In plain Language, I have been in Love with you from the first Moment of our Acquaintance, and have suffer'd, in the Combat of Reason and Virtue against a strong, and unlawful, Passion, the severest Tryals that ever a Woman, perhaps, underwent. This Confession ought not to alarm you, nor give you a bad Opinion of my Modesty ; for this Reason, that the only Motive of it is, that I may, with your Assistance, find an Opportunity of resisting the strongest Temptation that a Heart prompt to indulge its Desires can meet with ; and besides the Merit which will redound to you in being the Instrument of my fiery Trial, you will have the Advantage of surmounting what must be a Temptation even to a Man of your Sanctity ; for if my Notions of Providence and Human Nature be just, the former, for the Exercise of our Virtue, does not quite extinguish the Passions
in

in the latter, otherwise such Men as you would enjoy Heaven on this Side the Grave, which I have often heard you say, was not, nor could be, the Case. Therefore I conclude that the Act of Charity I require at your Hands, will be meritorious even with Respect to yourself, in resisting a pretty strong Temptation, such as that of being in Bed with a Woman not at all, if my Glass does not flatter me, disagreeable, and where there's full Opportunity, without Interruption, to indulge Sensuality. This is my Scheme, and which, with your Consent, I intend to put in Execution, as the most powerful Temptation, considering the Disposition of my Heart, which possibly I can be under, and of which the Resistance will be the most meritorious Action of my Life. She here left off speaking, and, with down cast Eyes, waited my Answer, which I was not a little puzzled how to frame. On the one Hand, I considered that the best of us all ought not wantonly to throw ourselves in Temptation's Way, trusting to our own Strength, which sometimes comes far short of what we imagine it to be. On the other Hand, bluntly to reject her Proposal would not only, I thought, be a terrible Baulk to her meritorious

C 3

Scheme,

Scheme, but likewise make her conclude that, having a Diffidence of my own Virtue, I durst not put it to so severe a Tryal. After going through this little Circle of Reflections, I told her that what she had proposed was a Matter of the greatest Consequence, which I would not take upon me to determine, 'till I had the Opinion of others upon it; and accordingly I laid the Case before the Consistory for the *Cas reservez*, or *reserved Cases*, who, after much Debate, agreed that, if the Priest and his Penitent could go through such a Scene, without yielding to the Temptation, and in such a Manner as to give no Scandal, or Umbrage to the Husband, the Action not only ceased to be sinful, but was, in some Respects, praise-worthy, and meritorious. Tho' this Determination of the Consistory left me at liberty to comply with the Lady's Proposal, yet as I had still some Doubts remaining, I was resolved not to acquaint her, at least speedily, with the Result, in hopes that Time, perhaps, might drive this Whim (for such I really thought it) out of her Head; but I was mistaken, for it wrought upon her Imagination so strongly, that this very Morning she wrote me a Letter, in which there were some
warm

warm Expressions that made me tremble; nevertheless as I was, under God and *St. Francis*, confident of my Courage to withstand all the Allurements of the Devil and the Flesh, I thought there was no Danger in complying with what she desir'd, only as a proper Means to exercise her Virtue and Modesty. This is a true State of the Affair, and as it will be made appear to be so, not only by the Declaration of the Community to which I belong, but likewise of the Members of the Consistory, your Fears, and Suspensions, I hope, notwithstanding the Situation you find us in, will subsist no longer; and as your Spouse has been prompted to undergo this severe Tryal, with no other View but to obtain a Blessing upon the Nuptial Bed, and, by her becoming a Mother, to make you easy and happy, What a cruel thing would it be in you to mis-interpret such noble, and pious Sentiments? But if, by an Infatuation not to be accounted for, or rather, by the Malice of our common Enemy, whose Business it is to throw Discord between Husband and Wife, you prove unkind to your innocent Spouse, or, by a Separation, give the World a Handle to blast her Reputation, I shall think myself bound in Justice to vindicate her Character,

racter, as well as my own, which must suffer in her being exposed. I own that Adventures such as this, however innocent, are made the Subject of Ridicule by Persons of a certain Stamp, who are fond of Scandal, and therefore I could wish it were not made public; and this, Sir, more upon your Account than your Wife's, or my own; for be assur'd, when the World is fairly inform'd of the Fact, with all its Circumstances, the judicious Part of Mankind will either condemn you as a rash, imprudent Man, or imagine that you laid hold of this Opportunity to get rid of a Wife with whom you had no Hopes of Issue, and who was, upon that Account, become your Aversion. For my own Part, whatever Turn this Affair may take, I am safe, having the Authority of the Consistory, and the Approbation of a calm and safe Conscience to support me in what I have done. All my Concern is for being the innocent Cause of a Division in your Family, and, perhaps, of your running headlong to your own Ruin, while you intend that of others. I wish, Sir, you may consider seriously of what you have now heard, before you fix on a Resolution: Let not Passion, or Jealousy, get the better of your Reason; and take this along with

with you, that your Wife is strictly virtuous. Here the Priest ended his long Discourse, and by the Influence of his Rhetoric, the Husband only excepted, made himself as white as Snow in the Opinion of all present, who cry'd out, with one Voice, How rash were we to judge uncharitably of this holy Man! Come, Mr. *Vimont*, the Case is far from being so bad as we at first thought; let us retire 'till Father *Dominick* puts on his Frock, and do you succeed him in a Post in which he made but a very poor Figure. How happy would it be for many honest Husbands in this Kingdom, that their Wives had no other Motives of admitting Monks to be their Bedfellows in the Husband's Absence, than what, it seems, influenced Mrs. *Vimont*! Soft, and fair, Gentlemen, said the honest Merchant, I am not naturally jealous, nor apt to entertain uncharitable Thoughts where the Thing will admit of any favourable Construction; but, in the present Case, I am in a Manner bewildered. On the one Hand, I have listen'd to a long unintelligible Story, at least to me, of meritorious Resistance of Temptations, in order to obtain a special Blessing from Heaven; but this Blessing could it be obtain'd by no other Means than Father *Dominick's* going to Bed to
my

my Wife? I have all the Respect in the World for a Man of his Character, and I believe him to be a devout pious Priest; but as my Wife knew very well that Infallibility is not so much as pretended to by the inferior Clergy, Was it not a monstrous Imprudence in her, or rather Boldness, to throw herself into the Arms of a Man, whom, by her own Confession, she loved? And had the Devil and the Flesh, prevailed in that critical Moment, I had, very likely, had the Pleasure of a Son without the Trouble of getting him. On the other Hand, with all due Submission to the reverend Members of the Consistory, I cannot approve of their Opinion, that an Action ceases absolutely to be vicious, where the Intention is pure and innocent. One of the Petitions of our Saviour's Prayer, which, I believe, both they, and all the casuistical Doctors of the Church, will allow to be the best that ever was composed, directly clashes with this System of its being not only lawful, but also highly laudable and meritorious, to throw ourselves into the Way of Temptation for the Exercise of our Virtue; and therefore I conclude that Father *Dominick* and my Wife committed a very great Fault, (though they had no wicked Intentions) not only by
act-

acting directly contrary to what is expressly enjoined us in that divine Form of Prayer, but also in giving me (in case I ever came to know of their having been in Bed together) but too just Cause of Suspicion; for as I have studied my Wife's Constitution, and know that she is capable of being moved, and her Passion so wrought upon as to forget, in certain Moments, every Concern but the present Enjoyment; and as we all know that Monks and Fryars are made of Flesh and Blood as well as other Men, it will be no easy Matter to make me believe that they could keep up to their favourite Scheme of resisting such powerful Temptation as that must be, where two Persons young, healthful, and vigorous, warm'd with mutual Love, naked in a bed together, and invited by many Circumstances, which I forbear mentioning, to act what I shall not name. No, no, nothing below the Angelical Nature is capable of standing its Ground against Temptations such as this; for where there's Flesh and Blood, there must be Desires, which excited by agreeable Objects, and Opportunities offered to indulge them, Virtue must yield to the Torrent, and quit the Field; and therefore, Sir, continued he, addressing himself

self to his Father-in-law, if you are of Opinion that your Daughter has not made a Breach of her matrimonial Vow, you'll oblige me, who am of a quite different Sentiment, to take her along with you 'till I see a little farther into this Affair, or to be very plain with you, 'till I see whether the Spirit, or the Flesh, has prevailed, which cannot be well known 'till nine Months hence. Mrs. *Vimont's* Father was one of those good Sort of Men, who think it an unpardonable Crime to suspect a holy Confessor of such a Trip as this, and would rather believe what he said, than what he beheld with his own Eyes; for which Reason, without the least Hesitation, he told his Son-in-law that he should be very sorry to leave his Daughter in the power of one whom he looked upon as a Man madly jealous, and void of all Sentiments of Religion, since he continued dubious of his Wife's Virtue after what had been told him by a Person, in whose Veracity he ought to have such an implicit Faith, as to attribute criminal Appearances, though ever so glaring, to Delusions of the evil Spirit, who greatly finds his Account in throwing Discord betwixt a Man and his Wife; and to be sure, continued he, there must be an universal Joy, at this Instant,

in

in the infernal Regions, when one of their most obstinate Enemies (for such I take this holy Man to be) has the Mortification of passing, at least in your disorder'd Imagination, for the Author of what was contrived in Hell; but I shall say no more upon this Subject, and only assure you that my Daughter shall go along with me, and not come within your Doors again till you have made your Peace with Heaven, and recovered the Use of your Reason. Let us now retire into another Room to give these two innocent Victims Time to put on their Clothes, after which you shall have no further Disturbance by me or any of mine; he then marched off, and the whole Company follow'd, expressing their Dissatisfaction at the unchristian Behaviour of this jealous-pated Husband, who, not having the Fear of God before his Eyes, had most uncharitably misconstrued the noble and pious Design of the holy Father *Dominick*, and the virtuous Woman his Wife, who were very glad, I suppose, to get so well out of the Scrape. It was not long before they were dress'd, and made their Appearance in a Parlour, where the Company waited for them. The Monk made a short, but pathetic, Speech, representing the Concern he was under to find

his good Intentions so far mistaken by Mr. *Vimont*, and that the Virtue of his innocent Spouse should be called in question at a Time when she was giving the noblest Proofs of it that human Nature is capable of ; but as he had Reason to believe that no Credit would be given to what he said in her or his own Justification, he would refer that to the Work of Providence, which, in its own good Time, would, he doubted not, dissipate the Mist of Error and Delusion which, at present, kept Mr. *Vimont* from perceiving Truth ; that it was his Business to go and prostrate himself before the Altar, and endeavour, by fervent Prayer, to obtain that Mercy for him ; after which he made a low Bow to the Company, and walk'd off triumphant. Mrs. *Vimont*, who had not open'd her Mouth during the whole Conference, approached her Husband, and, with Tears in her Eyes, address'd him in the following Manner:

IT would be Folly in me to pretend, by any thing I can say, to cure a Man so strongly prepossess'd, that even the convincing Representation of Father *Dominick* had no Effect, I shall not therefore attempt to remove your injurious Suspicions of my Honour. Heaven
will

will do my Innocence that Justice, and your Conscience will, some time or other, be your Tormentor, for using a Woman with so much Barbarity, who had no other View but your Happiness in what she did. I cannot but take Notice of one Part of your Discourse wherein you asserted your Knowledge of my Constitution, and what an Ascendant Passion, at certain Times, had over me. I will now convince you of your Mistake by declaring before Heaven, which knows the Sentiments of my Heart, that I have a natural Abhorrence to what you imagine I was highly delighted with; that any Raptures of Joy or Pleasure, which appeared in my Looks or Behaviour, were all feigned, and that I inwardly hated what I seemed outwardly to relish, only because I knew it gave you Satisfaction; and the same Motive that influenced me on those Occasions, prevailed with me now to try an Experiment with a View to make you happy, which has unluckily turned out to my Disgrace, by your misconstruing my Intentions, and attributing to a vicious Inclination what was owing to a more noble Motive. Time will, I doubt not, restore you to the Use of your Reason, and you will see, when too late, your own Folly; for I

am glad to let you know before the Company who have been Witnesses to this extravagant Scene, that as you have exposed me in this publick Manner I am resolved never to cohabite with you any more, and if possible, never to see your Face again. Come, Father, said she turning towards him, Let us fly from this dismal House, the Mansion of Discord and Jealousy, and leave Mr. *Vimont* to indulge his Vanity with the pleasing Thought of this grand Discovery, and how nobly he has resented his Wife's pretended Infidelity. Adieu, Sir, may you soon be made sensible of your Injustice and Folly, which will prove a more severe Punishment than I, were I to have my Wish, could contrive for you: With that she made her Curtesy, walk'd towards the Door, followed by the whole Company, who each in their Turns threw a Squib at the poor dejected Husband, and who was in a Moment left by himself to think at Freedom of this odd Adventure, which soon came to the Knowledge of the Public, and was the Occasion of many Tea-Table-Battles, carried to such Heights by the contending Parties, that Volleys of Cups and Saucers were discharged in great Rage and Fury, and many a fine Lady lost Blood in the Cause,

Cause, besides a favourite Set of China dash'd to Pieces which she regretted more than her Wounds. This famous Adventure was soon spread through the whole Country with so many Additions, and ludicrous Circumstances, that the Parties principally concerned thought it convenient to let the Public know the real Story as I have here put it down.

As I am resolved, for my own Diversion and no body's else, not only to throw in every now and then such Reflections as I in my great Wisdom shall think fit, but to jump all at once from the principal Story into Digressions, and turn back again with as little Ceremony as I left it, the only Reader into whose Hands this Manuscript is likely to fall, will allow me, I hope, to gratify my Whim, or my Vanity, if she pleases, because I really think I have a particular Talent in making curious Animadversions, and am a Non-such for Digressions. By Way of Specimen of my Genius in the former take what follows.

MADAM *Vimont* in my humble Opinion was either a Fool, or *something worse*. To imagine that Heaven would work a Miracle in her Favour,

because, forsooth, she had Virtue enough not to be a down right Prostitute, is a Piece of Presumption and Folly, which one would think even a weak Woman could not be guilty of; and if she really thought this Action meritorious, I must beg her Ladyship's Pardon if I class her among the *non compos mentis* Folks: So much for one Side of the Question. The other indeed puzzles me a little more; and to tell the Truth I know not well how to bring myself of with flying Colours. This *something worse* must be explained, and this Explication will, I fear, make the very devout Mrs. *Vimont* a downright Coquette of the worst Sort. --- Let me think a little of this. --- Yes. --- It must be so. --- *Father Dominick* had too much Penetration not to know that her meritorious Resistance of Temptation were Words of no Signification; that is, he was to feign that he really and truly believed her Ladyship's Scheme was literally such as she represented it; and if unfortunately he pressed and she yielded, as her Intention was pure and innocent, all the Blame was to be laid at the Priest's Door, who had behaved quite otherwise than she expected. If this be allowed, as I think it must, to be her Ladyship's Plan, and on the other Hand, it be grant-

granted that the good Confessor knew that all her Pretensions were mere Grimace, What can one think of his exposing himself to a Temptation, which, if he withstood, would draw upon him her Indignation? Would not he, if his Pretences to Piety and Virtue had been what he endeavoured to make the World believe, bluntly told her that he understood her Drift, and would by no means comply with her Request, for which Reason and many more which I shall not now mention, had I been upon their Jury I would have very fairly brought them both in *Guilty*. — So much by Way of Reflection, and to show that I don't forget my Promises, I shall, after a few pretty little Stories about myself and a certain smart young Fellow which I am just in the Humour to relate, give you a Specimen of my digressive Genius.

You know, Madam, (now I think I am speaking to you) that we Country Girls love, of all things in the World, the epistolary Way of being courted, for two good Reasons: In the first Place, we can read all the soft pretty Things that flow from the Pens of our passionate Swains, without discovering by our Blushes how well we are pleased; and in the next Place,

Ti-

Timidity, the Characteristic of a Man unacquainted with the Ways of the *Beau-Monde*, is reckoned among us a distinguishing Mark of the fine Gentleman ; and as this is the Case, were it not for those pretty Vehicles called Love-Letters, a young Fellow must languish for seven long Years before he dares venture to tell his Mistress that he loves her, and 'tis ten to one but his Declaration even then (tho' she knew very well many Years before by his Looks, Sighs, and all the other Symptoms of a love-sick Heart, how the Case stood with him) would throw her into Fits, so that I may safely say (and pray let it pass for one of my own Reflections) that were our Country-Modesty and your *Paris*-Impudence blended together, something very decent would arise from that Mixture, which might be made a standing Rule for Lovers of all Denominations throughout the Kingdom. Such a Regulation as this would cure us of a monstrous Notion, that if a young Fellow happens to be alone with a Lady, and does not directly tell her that she has robbed him of his Heart, she either thinks him a Blockhead who knows not how to improve such an Opportunity, or that he de-

despises her, and had he otherwise all the Accomplishments in the World, she would think him a Man of no Taste. Now back again to my own Story, which I resolve to begin at my 16th Year, for my Adventures before that are not worth writing. I happened one Day to be angling for Trouts in a little River that runs at the Foot of our Garden, which is a Diversion I am much taken with, and have very often lost my Dinner in Pursuit of it. As this Day was very hot, and I a little fatigued with my Exercise, I laid me down upon the Grass in a very private convenient Place, about a Mile below our House, and fell fast asleep. I dreamt that I was stretch'd at my full Length, close by a purling Stream, which was very true; and methought after a short Symphony of the most harmonious Music I had ever heard, a Youth arose out of the Middle of the Stream, so charmingly handsome, that I could have sworn he was the God of Love, had I not considered that *Cupid* is a blind Boy, and has besides no Intercourse with our Water Nymphs. After he had remained some time gazing at me, which I very well observed, tho' my Eyes were shut, he went to the opposite Bank where he found a Fishing-Rod, how it came there is what

what I am not to account for, and began to tempt the simple finny Tribe with his deceitful Fly, but, to my great Surprise, no sooner was the unhappy Victim dragged to Land, but with a gentle Hand he freed it from the entangling Hook, and restored the gasping Creature to its Element again. This Clemency is, no Doubt, thought I within myself, a Reprimand for my Barbarity in taking away the Lives of those harmless little Trouts; and this Dream had such an Impression on my Mind that ever since the Thoughts of destroying any living Creature were shocking, and from that Day I renounced my favourite Amusement; but to return to my Angler, who soon, I thought, set about catching other Things than Trouts, for having lengthened his Line, it reached to the Place where I lay, his Hook caught hold of my Petticoat, and finding myself ready to be pulled into the River, I gave a terrible Shriek, which awoke me, and glad I was to find it was but a Dream, but greatly surprised to see a young Man sitting on the opposite Bank, the very Picture of what I had seen in my Sleep. For some Moments he gazed on me and I on him, without either of us speaking, and had he not at last broke Silence, I should have thought

thought that I was still dreaming. Madam, said he, in a pretty soft lisping Tone, (which I always thought so agreeable that I often affected it myself) I was very much concerned to think that some very disagreeable Dream had disturbed you in your Sleep, and the loud Shriek which you just now gave makes me conclude, that you fancied yourself in some great Danger; and I am apt to think, continu'd he, smiling, you imagined that *Neptune* or some of the River Deities having from their watry crystal Dwellings espied, as they thought, some Sylvan Goddess, were come to seize on you: I neither dream'd of Gods nor Goddesses, reply'd I, but of a young Man very like yourself who had hooked me instead of a Fish, and was, I thought, hawling me into the Water, where he stood himself, and perceiving you when I opened my Eyes, sitting on the Bank, 'till you spoke I was not very sure whether I was awake or not, and to this Minute I am at a Loss what to think of this strange Dream; but I have a Nurse who explains all our Dreams, I will go and consult her, with that I rose up to be gone. Madam, said he with a languishing Look, you need not give yourself the Trouble of going to consult your Nurse about the
Mean-

Meaning of this Dream. As I am pretty well versed in that Science, if you'll be so good as to remain a little longer where you are, I will endeavour to explain it, and at the same Time acquaint you with something that happened to me as I was coming to take the Diversion of Angling, which, in my Opinion, very clearly explains this mysterious Dream of yours, at least I find one Part of what an old Woman told me but too true, and would fain hope that the last Part of what I think I may call a Prediction may prove as true as the other. Very well thought I within myself, I foresee where this Prophecy will land, a Declaration of Love I dare say in a parabolical Way; for to tell me downright he loved me, was against the Laws of Modesty, and the Custom of the Country, as I have already said; and to speak the plain Truth, I wish'd that I might not be deceived, for I felt certain little Motions and Flutterings about my Heart which I had never felt before; and when I was going I should have been most terribly vex'd had he not pressed me to stay a little longer. When I had made my little Tour of Reflections, which was finished in the twinkling of an Eye, for I usually do a great deal that Way in a very small Time, I told my
angling

angling Spark, that as I was very curious to hear marvellous Stories, I would listen to his, provided it was not of the Length of a Sermon. No, no, cry'd he, with quite a different Look from that which he put on when I was going to leave him. This old *Sybil* pronounced my Doom in a very few Words; You are going, young Man, said she, to amuse yourself with catching Trouts, but on yonder Bank lies a beautiful Nymph who will catch you at the Expence of her own Freedom. Thus pronounced the Oracle, and as I believe you, Madam, to be one of the *Naide* Nymphs, whom perhaps I shall never have the Happiness of seeing again, I cannot be justly accused of Impudence, and of breaking in upon the Rules which Custom has established in this Corner of the Country, by declaring that you will carry my Heart along with you. I am, 'tis true, caught, miserably caught, but how you are to lose your Liberty still remains a Mystery. I could not help smiling at this ingenious Invention of treating me as a Sea-Nymph, that he might not transgress the Rules and Customs among us, and to stop the Progress of his Declarations, or rather to let him know that I was a

Mortal like himself, I freely told him my Name, and he in return told me his, which was the *Chevalier de Miremont*, whose Father I had seen sometimes at our House, but never the Son, tho' our Estates and Houses were but a few Miles distant. This young Gentleman had but lately come from *Paris*, where he had been sent for his Education. Tho' I am forbid, Madam, said he, by a very whimsical Custom which prevails in this Country, to talk to Miss *Biron* as when I believed her to be a Goddess of *Neptune's* Court, yet I think it will be no Crime to declare that nothing on Earth could give me so much Joy as to find myself deceived in my first Opinion, for Reasons I shall not now presume to mention, otherwise than by the Language of my Eyes, which are not comprehended in our rigorous Customs, but which, I hope, will sufficiently explain the Sentiments of my Heart. No more of the tender Strain, Sir, said I, interrupting him, as a *Nai de* I diverted myself with your Gallantry, but as I am now a human Creature, and your Countrywoman, I should be sorry you gave me Occasion to look upon you as a young Man who had lost in *Paris*, by the monstrous Customs of that wicked City, what we Women in this

re-

retired Country look upon as the most valuable Accomplishment of your Sex. Your good Opinion of me, Madam, is the Height of my Ambition, and I will take Care to preserve it as I would my Life ; with such Sentiments as these you may be assured that I never will presume to tell you the Situation of my Heart, but in the Manner which Custom authorises. Well, well, said I laughing, when that happens I will give you a Recipe ; and now as we have clear'd up all our Mysteries, it is proper that we retire to our respective Habitations. I hope, Madam, said he, you'll give me Leave to cross this little River, and to wait upon you home ; by no Means, answer'd I, for besides that I have but a little Way to go, and that there's no Danger of Rapes or ravenous Beasts in these peaceable Fields, were any of my Family to see you in my Company, I should be at a Loss how to account for my having picked up a Stranger ; so that I desire, Sir, you'll make the best of your Way ; but I soon changed my Note, for scarce had I pronounced the last Orders, when a monstrous Bear leaped out of a Wood about a hundred Paces from the River, and ran towards me. I screamed out with all my Force, and had not the Che-

valier jump't into the Water, and rather flew than ran to the Place where I stood pale and trembling, I doubt not but I should have wet my Legs and Petticoats too to get over to his Side. My Protector had by good Luck a Hanger, which he drew with all the Calmness of a General, and beg'd of me to be persuaded that he would defend me while he had a Drop of Blood in his Veins. I was half dead already with Fear, so that I did not so much as thank him for his generous Intentions; and when that terrible Creature and he came to Action, I swoon'd away and did not recover out of it, till the Chevalier, who had killed our Enemy, took up some Water out of the River in his Hat, and threw it upon my Face. It is not easy to imagine my Horror, when recovering my Senses and Sight, I saw the Chevalier as well as the Ground where the Battle had been all covered with Blood; this Sight had like to have thrown me into a second fainting Fit, not doubting but my generous Deliverer was mortally wounded. I am afraid, Sir, said I in a faint Voice, that your Courage has cost you dear, and that you'll inwardly accuse me as the Cause of your Disastre. I'm sorry, Madam, replied he with Vivacity, that you have
sq

so mean an Opinion of me as to imagine I would regret the Loss of all my Blood in your Defence; the Wound which I have received from the Bear is but a Trifle not worth minding; my only Concern is to have you perfectly recovered from the Fright this Adventure has thrown you in, and to see you in a Place of Safety. As there may be more of those Creatures in yonder Wood, I hope you'll make no Difficulty now of allowing me to wait upon you home. Such a Benefactor as you, Sir, has a Right to command, tho' my own Interest were not concerned in what you require; I accept of your Offer, not so much out of Fear of being attacked by more of those ravenous Creatures, as with a View to get your Wound dress'd, and to let my Family know what a signal Service you have done me, which, unless I very much alter my Thoughts, I shall not speedily forget. Madam, said he, the Pleasure of doing you a Service is an ample Reward in itself, and I beg you would not put such a Trifle as this upon the footing of a signal Service, or so much as mention it to any of your Family, for I should be ashamed to receive Thanks for what I did in my own Defence as well as yours, and which (as it was no more

than killing a Beast who had no Arms but his Claws) is none of those glorious Exploits that may be recounted and far less boasted of. I own that I was touched by the Contempt which he had shewed for his Life to save mine, and still more to see that he was not at all vain upon the Action. I already mentioned some extraordinary Motions and Flutterings of Heart, which as much Novice as I was in Matters of Love, I could easily perceive were some of the *Blind Boy's* cunning Tricks, who found me, I suppose, a very proper Subject to try Experiments upon; and to tell the Truth this Chevalier, even before his gallant Defence of my Life, had inspired me with an extraordinary odd Sort of I don't know what, I mean, I did not know at that Time what to make of it, but thank my Stars I did not long remain in a State of Ignorance; for after he had dispatch'd our Foe, my Heart peek'd with Generosity, or something else, plainly told me that, in spite of Reason and all earthly Powers, it was his and would be his, and would have forced my Tongue to tell him so, had I not bit it every Time that it attempted to blab out the shameful Story.

WHEN

WHEN we were got pretty near our House, and out of Danger's Way, the Chevalier, who had been, I suppose, biting his Tongue as well as I, to keep it under due Subjection, told me, after a deep Sigh, nay indeed half a Dozen, (which I have been told is the common Practice of Gallants when they take Leave of their *Dulcinias*) that as I had now nothing to fear, he would importune me no longer with his Presence, and saying so he made a full Stop, and you know in Civility I must do so to. For a Minute, or may be longer, we stood like two Statues, and seemed to have lost not only the Use of our Tongues, but also of all our Senses. I was more than once tempted to burst out a laughing, for I am none of those weeping Lovers who cannot laugh when a Jest comes in their Way, tho' I believe I am as capable of a serious Attachment as other Folks. At last the Chavalier, after a second Volley of Sighs, and some languishing Looks, pronounced these mysterious Words, which he left me to unriddle. *I have received this Day a Wound which I believe is mortal, because the only Physician who can cure me must not know my Case*; which said, he made a profound Bow, and turn'd about to be

be gone. My Pride said, Let him go. Something else pressed me to call him back; the former made me blush, the latter made me sigh. What a Compound of Contradiction was I in that unhappy Moment? Where the Conflict would have ended I know not; but I verily believe that *unaccountable Something* would have got the better of my Ladyship's Pride, and I should have been silly enough to have called to him to face about, but, as good Luck would have it, just as I was going to give the Word of Command, I happened to cast an Eye towards our House, and saw my Father with another Gentleman coming our Way. For Heaven's Sake, Sir, cry'd I, turn back. Here comes my Father, who would think it very odd to see a Man retiring from me the Moment he appeared; if you are positively resolved not to go to our House, tho' I think the Condition you are now in requires speedy Assistance, it will look better to tell him yourself that you desire to be excused, and your doing so will very much oblige me. That's more than enough, Madam, said he, not only to engage me to go to your House, but to the End of the World; so back comes he, and forward go we hand in hand. *The World's End*, remember that

that, said I within myself, and put also in your Memorandum Book the *Mortal Wound*, and the *Unconsultable Physician*. Poor Chevalier, thou shalt neither go to the World's End, nor die without a Cure, if I can help it. I hope the Reader will not forget that this is said within myself. Now imagine to yourself my Father's Astonishment when he saw me quietly led by a Gentleman whose Clothes were all bedawbed with Blood, and he himself pale with the Loss of his own; and I believe had I kept silent any Time, he would have fancied it was a Vision, but I soon convinced him that what he saw was real, and in a few Words told him our Adventure, not forgetting, as may be very well imagined, to extol the Valour of my generous Defender; Gratitude called upon me to do him that Justice, and I can tell you, but let it remain a Secret betwixt us, that Vanity, the general Foible of the Fair Sex, came in for a Share. I verily believed that, without Flattery, I might rank myself among our first-rate Female-Orators, and to be sure I was glad of this Opportunity of letting my Chevalier see to what a bright Goddess he had vowed himself a Slave. But to return to my Father: Though he was a Man of a severe, rigid, and, in short,

a most tyrannical ill-natured Temper, (I know to whom I give such a hideous Picture of him who gave me Life) yet on this Occasion he behaved much better than I expected, for he loaded the Chevalier with Compliments of an Ell long, and insisted absolutely on his going to his House, from whence he said he would send an Express directly to acquaint his Father where he was, and what had happened. I swear upon my Honour that nothing could have happened that pleased me so well as this Invitation, except the Chevalier's frank Acceptance; and I believe had he watched my Countenance at that Instant, he would have observed a Vermillion in my Cheeks that would have let him into a Secret, which I did not intend he should know so soon; but whether he did or did not observe me, I cannot say, but he was discreet enough not to let me perceive, even by his Looks, that he had taken the least Notice of the Joy that appeared in mine. My Father's first Care, when we arrived, was to send for a Surgeon to dress the Chevalier's Wound, which was larger than could have been imagined, considering the small Account he himself made of it. This cursed Bear had drove his pointed Tusks pretty deep into his
left

left Shoulder, and you may judge of my Concern, when asking the Surgeon, after he had gone through the first Operation, what he thought of it, he shook his Head and retired, and so did I to my Closet, having a very great Weight upon my Spirits, which I thought a few Tears would alleviate, and that the Cure might not fail by Interruption, I lock'd myself in, and cried 'till I was half blind. In my Soliloquy (for in that you may be sure I did not deviate from the common Practice of my Sex) I began with my Dream on the Water-Side, which I related with as much Exactness as if I had been telling it to Persons who knew nothing of the Matter. My next Employment was to draw a very exact Picture of my imaginary Charmer in the Water, and compare it with the real Chevalier sitting on the Bank, and to my very great Satisfaction I found that the former was but a Copy in many Things far short of the Original. Upon this Discovery I broke out into the following rapturous Questions and Answers: Love, O cruel Love! Why raisest thou such Tumults in my Breast? Because I love Mischief. Is this the fatal Day that *Cupid* chose to pierce my tender Heart? To be sure. Unhappy Wretch! What Madness drives

drives thee on ? Youth and Want of Thought. Art thou sure of Love for Love ? No. Will not thy Father oppose thy Happiness though every thing else should prove favourable ? Yes. What do'st thou then propose ? Nothing. Wilt thou not prevent thy Ruin by crushing this Passion before it grows too strong ? I don't think I can. Here's enough in all Conscience to shew what a Progress I had made in a few Hours ; and it may be fairly concluded that had I gone on with the same Rapidity, before the Week was half over, a Mad-house would have been a very proper Habitation for me. But here it comes into my Head to tell you, by the bye, that my Mother had taken all possible Care not only to give me a Christian Education, but also was for ever praising the Monastic Life, and setting forth the Happiness of those who retired from the World, no doubt with a View to make me fond of being a Nun, not so much, I dare say, out of regard to my Soul, as to get me off her Hands with a trifling Sum, which could not be done in the Case of Marriage. I should not have judged so rashly of her Intentions, but that her Behaviour in the Sequel put the Thing out of Doubt ; and tho' I had no Inclination to be a Nun, yet to prevent

vent being teized from Morning to Night, I should have at last consented to shut myself up for Life, had not this Adventure happened, which quite altered my Way of thinking. But now to proceed: While I was talking to myself in the Closet, the poor Chevalier, by the Surgeon's Order, was obliged to go to Bed, where, as he told me afterwards, he had some Soliloquies much of a piece with mine, though not quite so extravagant. I shall pass over a bad Night's Rest, that you know is common the first Night of one's being in Love; neither shall I trouble you with a Description of my next Morning's early Walk in a solitary Grove, where I hung over the Head of a warbling Fountain, with a Lute in my Hand, softening the Murmurs of the Water. The Charms of this romantic Place, joined to the Facility that I have been always told, and now find by Experience, Persons touched with the Distemper of Love find to speak in Rhime, I prepared my Lute and sung the following Words, which I need not swear were an *Impromptu*, or off-hand Work.

I.

Near silver Andes' chryſtal Stream,
Cupid threw a poiſon'd Dart;
And ſhall I not his Malice blame,
Who drove it thro' my Heart?*

II.

*But ſince the cruel Work is done,
I'll make but this Requeſt;
That Venus would command her Son,
To pierce young Mirmont's Breſt.*

THO' I greatly indulged my melancholy Dispoſition of Mind in this agreeable Solitude, and was more delighted with the Morning Songs of the happy plumed Race than my own, yet ſtill the Thoughts of the Chevalier's Wound were uppermoſt, and every Moment was an Age 'till I was informed how he had paſſed the Night. With this View I left the Garden, and who ſhould meet me as I was entering the Houſe but the Surgeon, whom,

* The Name of the little River where ſhe met with the Chevalier.

without so much as the Ceremony of a Good-morrow, I directly interrogate about his Patient. I have not as yet given his Wound a second Dressing, said he, and all I can tell you is, that having slept but very indifferently, he's a little feverish this Morning, which makes his Case the more dangerous ; but I am going to prepare a Medicine which I hope will prevent his Fever from coming to any Height, and away he went, as I did to my Chamber with a heavy Heart.

As my Father had sent a Footman to the *Marquis de Mirmont* to acquaint him of his Son's Misfortune, that Gentleman with his Lady and their eldest Son arrived before Dinner with a Design to take the sick Person along with them ; but as his Fever was much increased, the Doctor was absolutely against transporting him ; and my Father joined him with so much Frankness, that it was determined he should remain some Days at our House ; so that his Father and Brother return'd in the Evening : As for the Mother, being extremely fond of her second Son, she would by no Means leave him, and made a handsome Compliment to my Father upon the Trouble

which her Family gave him, to which he answered very politely.

My Humour is so particularly whimsical, or to speak more properly, Nature has endowed me with such an Art of disguising my real Sentiments, that tho' I was plunged over Head and Ears in Anxiety and Grief, my Behaviour in Company gave Occasion to some Reprimands from my Mother, for appearing to be so little affected with the young Gentleman's Misfortune, which would not have happened, said she, had he abandoned you to the Fury of that ravenous Bear. 'Tis very true, Madam, replied I, in a very cool sedate Manner, that had not the Chevalier encountered my Foe, in all human Probability, I should have been roughly handled; and putting the Thing in that Light, I am, no Doubt, obliged to him; but as nothing establishes a young Gentleman's Character more than to give early Proofs of his Courage, does not the Person who furnishes him, either by Design or Accident, an Opportunity of signalizing himself, not only deserve his own Thanks, but of all who wish him well? And if this be allowed, and sure I am it will, at least, by the Male Part of the Creation, may

may not I conclude that, every thing duly considered, the Ballance is in my Favour? All I could have lost was Life, and he has gain'd, what's preferable, Reputation. As this is my Way of thinking about this Affair, I ought to appear gay and joyful rather than otherwise, by which I express a real Satisfaction at his Happiness, and, as it were, share with him in the pleasing Ideas which always accompany gallant Actions; for to be grieved at the Indisposition which he labours under, is to be sorry for the Occasion of his acquiring immortal Fame, which constitutes the Felicity of great Souls. Many Instances might be adduced both in ancient and modern History, of Persons who cheerfully sacrificed their Lives to immortalize their Memories; and tho' some are pleased to imagine, that to have any Regard to what Posterity may think of us, is the Quintessence of Quixotism, yet I humbly differ from them for two very good Reasons. In the first Place, it must greatly shock one in their last Moments, if they are conscious that Posterity will, by an impartial Survey of their Actions, think of them with Horror; and, on the other Hand, what Satisfaction must it be to one going out of the World to think that After-Ages charm'd

with his Virtue, will make Mention of him as a Pattern fit for Imitation. As there is in the former Case a gloomy Prospect that renders Death still more frightful, so in the latter there's an agreeable Visto that sweetens the bitter Pill. And since I am, I don't know how, got into the philosophical Strain, I must beg my dear Mamma's Patience 'till I quite empty my Budget, which will be very soon done as I have only this to add, that I think Grief for the Death of Relations or Friends, one of the most extravagant Customs, not to say worse, that the World abounds with; for take which Side of the Question you will, you must be equally pinched. Are they happy after Death? We ought to rejoice. Are they miserable? It is in consequence of a just Punishment; and as, in their condemned State, they are the Objects of God's Wrath, they ought not to be the Subjects of our Grief, otherwise than to be sorry that they were guilty of such Actions as made them deservedly wretched; and even this Sorrow carries a Mixture of Joy along with it, in so far as it affords us an Opportunity of considering that we must follow another Road than they did to be happy hereafter. My God, cried my Mother, interrupting me, What
strange

strange Notions has this Girl got into her Head ! Tho' I cannot conceive what she means by her metaphysical Jumble of Wrath and Grief, Sorrow and Joy, yet there's something so uncommon and bold in her abstracted and wild Ideas, that I shall not be easy till I consult with Father *Ribault* whether she has not uttered Things against Religion. Very well, thought I ; now thou hast brought thy self into a fine Scrape ; and 'tis ten to one but this fly Son of *Loyola* will, in Complaisance to my devout Mother, make thee a Heretick, and order thee to make a formal Recantation of thy Heterodox Opinions ; besides, some Weeks Fasting and Prayer, and, perhaps, considering the Heinousness of the Crime, a little Morning Exercise with a holy knotted Rope, which the Godly call *Flagellation*. Tho' I am a good *Catholick*, and have a just Regard for the Authority of the Church, yet as I cannot bring my self to think that Heaven has made me a reasonable Creature, without the Privilege of thinking and acting as such, were all the Churchmen on Earth to tell me that I must think as my Fore-fathers did, tho' my Reason plainly tells me otherwise, I shall beg to be excused ; and unless this cunning Jesuit can
really

really make it evident that I am mistaken in the Opinion that so much frightens my poor Mother, I will neither fast, pray, nor whip myself, I can assure him. Such were my Sentiments ; but it may be easily believed that I took Care to keep them within my own Breast ; for had I mentioned any such thing, my Mother, who good Woman gave an implicit Faith to whatever her Confessor said, would have thought me possessed by an evil Spirit, and I should have been condemned to go thro' all the Ceremony of publick Exorcism. But 'tis now time to shift the Scene, and continue the Thread of my principal Story, which I shall abridge as much as possible, at least the trifling Part of it, that I may enlarge a little when I have Matters of greater Consequence to entertain you with. Our *Æsculapius* was as good as his Word in preventing the Encrease of Mr. *Mirmont's* Fever ; and finding, upon a second Dressing of his Wound, that it look'd better than it could well be expected, he came with Joy in his Countenance to give us the good News, and did not fail to make us sensible of his Skill and Ability, upon which every one in their Turns made him a Compliment, and I must say that I really think he performed Wonders ;
for

for in five Days the Chevalier was in a Condition to leave his Bed, and in three more to take the Air in the Garden. As he had a Nurse who attended him while he was confined to his Bed and Chamber, he had found Means, by the powerful Influence, no Doubt, of a little Gold, to persuade this good Woman to deliver me a Letter, which she performed so dexterously that I found it in my Pocket without knowing how or which Way it had been convey'd there; however I did not much trouble my Head to find out what Slight of Hand had been made Use of to deceive me; and to speak sincerely I was agreeably surpris'd upon opening this Letter to find it contained what follows.

To Mademoiselle de Biron.

Madam,

WHILE I observe a general Satisfaction in this House upon my Recovery, and am loaded with congratulatory Compliments, little do my Friends know how far they mistake my Case; 'tis true, that trifling Scratch in my Shoulder gives me no more Pain; but I have still a deep and dangerous Wound, which cannot be cured but by
the

the Person who gave it. Your Interest, Madam, with that Person is, I know, all-powerful; and without your generous Assistance I am lost, undone. 'Tis impossible that a Lady, who has all the Charms that Nature can bestow, can have a Heart Proof against Compassion, where there's such an Object as the distressed

Chevalier de Mirmont.

I had scarce finished reading this *Billet-doux* when the same *Mercury* who had been the Messenger, appeared in the Form of his Nurse, and, falling on her Knees, implored my Pardon to a Chamber-maid; naming her, whom she had prevailed with to put a Letter in my Pocket while I was asleep, which I hope, continued she, your Ladyship has found, and will be so good as to honour me as the Bearer of your Answer, which the generous good Gentleman expects with the utmost Impatience; and which, reply'd I smiling, should I refuse, would be a Guinea out of your Pocket; Is it not so Nurse? Yes, yes, Madam, he's as generous as a Prince; and I doubt not but if I am so happy as to deliver him an Answer, he'll nobly pay the Postage. Well, well, Nurse, as
he

he is rich, and you but a poor Woman, I am glad its in my Power to oblige you, when it costs me only the Trouble of writing a few Words ; upon which I went into my Closet and wrote what follows, which I sealed up and gave to Nurse, who made but one Step to the Door.

To the Chevalier de Miremont.

Sir,

IF my Interest with the Person on whom depends your Cure, be such as you imagine, your Wound, tho' ever so deep, shall soon be healed up ; and when you think fit to let me know to whom I am to address myself, you may expect all the Service in the Power of

Felicité de Biron.

THO' melancholy or even serious Reflections are Things that I am not often troubled with, yet upon this Occasion I fell into a very deep Fit of Revery ; and as I always speak to myself when I am alone, here is my Harangue. Now do I plainly see that my Deliverer and I are
going

going to take a Trip to the *Island of Love*, and and tho' 'tis a hazardous Voyage, in which many have been shipwrecked, yet venture I must, 'tis the Will of Fate. I shall soon have a second Letter which will tell me that I am the Person whose bright Eyes have given the Wound, and which my kind Looks can only cure. Shall I, in Imitation of other Women in the like Case, appear to be angry, or at least treat all his Protestations as mere Words not to be depended on? Shall I tell him, (for to write after such a Declaration would be a very wrong Step) that if I thought he were serious, I would immediately shew his Letter to my Father and Mother, without whose Approbation I was resolved to embark in no Amour; and that if he persists in his Project of addressing his Vows to me, his first Step should be to inform his own Parents of his Designs, who, if they approved of them, would make a Proposal to mine, on which I should, no Doubt, have their Orders how to regulate my Conduct. Well, all this is mighty regular, but mighty far from the Route which my Heart traces out. Should your and his Parents, says my Heart, disapprove of the Match, for Reasons of Interest, What must become of me?

I must be made a Sacrifice, and let me tell you, that if I am miserable, your Happiness is at an End. A rash Step now may, without Remedy, ruin all, whereas if you'll be conducted by my Advice, Time and the Vicissitudes of human Affairs, may put it out of the Power of Parents to make yourself and me miserable; I would therefore have you lay aside affected Indifference, frankly own to your Lover, how much he is in my good Graces, leave the Care of his and your Happiness to his Heart and me, and we will, in Spite of all Opposition, bring you together. Thus spoke the little Flatterer: And indeed less Rhetorick might have served to prevail with me to trust to the Ability of such a skilful Pilot. I had no sooner come to this Resolution, than enter Nurse with another Epistle. What, said I, do you bring back my Letter? Did not you find the Gentleman? Yes, yes, Madam, I found him; and your Ladyship will find, by this little Bit of Paper, that I am none of the worst qualified in the World for doing Gentlemen and Ladies Services of this Kind. My Fortune depends upon the Answer I am to carry back. May Heaven inspire you to send such a Letter as may be agreeable to the worthy Gentleman; indeed it

were a Pity he should be crossed in any Thing; he's so lovely, so gentle, so humble, and so generous, that were I a Lady I know what I would do. He told me, That he would be very uneasy 'till he saw me again, and then said, but so prettily I shall never forget it, Good Nurse, if you bring me such an Answer as I expect, this little Purse with what's in it shall be your own. I could not help smiling to think how eloquent the Prospect of a Silk Purse, well lined, made this illiterate Creature, and to reflect how easily such as she might be made Instruments in carrying on the most criminal Negotiations; but I was too impatient to read my Letter to continue my Reflections on Nurse's Behaviour; I therefore retired to my Closet where I read what follows, and with the same Breath wrote an Answer, which I have subjoined to the Copy of the Chevalier's Letter; and here you have them both without Addition, or Diminution.

To

To Mademoiselle de Biron.

Madam,

IS it possible that my Looks and Sighs have not informed you before now how the Case is with me; but since they have been so bad Interpreters, my Pen must, with a trembling Hand, plead the Cause of my poor wounded Heart, which from your fair Eyes received the fatal Blow, and from your Pity must expect its Cure. You generously promised me your Assistance when you knew the Person; this you now do. Let me therefore lay hold of that dear obliging Expression in your Letter, [You may expect all the Service in the Power of Felicité de Biron,] and hope that as it's in your Power to make the happiest Man living of the most wretched Creature upon Earth, you will not deviate from your Promise; because you are yourself the Person who must pronounce the happy or miserable Fate of

Miremont.

To the *Chevalier de Miremont*.

Sir,

WERE I to tell you that your Declaration is what I did not expect, I should tell you a Story. Something within me answers, I believe, to something within you, to which I know not what Name to give, except we shall call it Sympathy. My Heart is so much your Friend, and has so far got the better of my Reason, that it orders me to assure you your Wound will be speedily cured, if the Operation consists with the Honour of

Felicité de Biron.

Now the Ice being broke, and the ceremonial Customs of the Country duly complied with, we had several *Tete a Tete's*, in which many pretty Things were said, and mutual Protestations of eternal Love and Fidelity made. But I must draw the Curtain on this happy State, and let you view us persecuted like Criminals, and made the unhappy Victims of Ambition. The Death of an only Brother, by an unhappy Fall from his Horse, of which the melancholy

choly News was sent my Father from *Paris*, where my Brother then was, threw us into a terrible Consternation, particularly my poor Mother who was so struck with it, that she fell sick, and died about two Months after. My Father, tho' none of your fond Husbands, seemed at first to take her Loss very much to Heart, but his Days of Mourning were but short, and whether with a Design to contract a second Marriage himself, or to procure a Husband for me, now become an Heiress, I shall not pretend to determine; but after settling his Country Affairs, he told me he intended to go and pass the Winter at *Paris*, and ordered me to get myself ready in a Week's Time to accompany him. In my Days of Indifference, nothing would have pleased me so much as such a Journey, but the Case was now altered, quite altered; and this cruel News threw such a Damp upon my Spirits, that a sudden Change appeared in my Countenance, which, by good Luck, my Father attributed to the Effects of Joy at that Time, but had Occasion to alter his Opinion before we set out. You will readily believe, that I was not slow in acquainting the Chevalier with this killing News, who sent me Word,

that he would come that Evening to an Arbour in the Garden, where we had some private Interviews. We were both punctual to the Hour, and both so confounded with the Thoughts of a Separation, that neither of us for some Minutes could pronounce a single Word. At last, however, we got the Use of our Tongues, and after many doleful Complaints against Fortune and my Father, which I forbear repeating, knowing how tender-hearted you are, and besides, I now reflect upon that Part of my Life with Confusion, not that my Thoughts or Actions had the least Tendency to what is criminal, but that I should have given Way to an Attachment which was the unhappy Source of my Misfortunes, without consulting wiser Heads than my own, or even making the least Shew of Resistance; so far from it, my Heart was an easy Purchase, and I enlisted under *Cupid's* Banner with the Chearfulness of a Slave who glories in his Chains, and who forms a thousand imaginary Pleasures, which soon vanish and leave him a Prey to Remorse and Despair. This little skipping from the Resolution we came to upon this weighty Affair of a Separation kept in so *a propos*, that I hope it will
be

be excused ; and now I return : In our wife Council, after very mature Deliberation, it was *nemine contradicente* resolved, that the Chevalier should inform his Mother of our Inclinations, who, as she was doatingly fond of him, and her Husband of her, he hoped would take our Cause in Hand, and prevail with his Father to propose a Match between us, which we very wisely thought a most reasonable Project, not at all considering that he was only the second Son of a Family not extremely rich, and I now an Heiress to a considerable Fortune, which entitled me, in my Father's aspiring Imagination, at least to a Peer of the Land. We had no Notion in those youthful Days that Parents would much sooner chuse to break their Childrens Hearts than lose the Prospect of a flattering Alliance. It is a Maxim you know, which Custom has established in this Part of the World, that Children have no Right to dispose of their Hearts or Persons ; Parents take Care to inculcate this Doctrine from the Moment they judge their Children capable of Instruction, or that an Impression can be made upon their Minds, which increases as they advance in Years, and at last is looked upon as a Duty so absolutely binding, that a
Girl

Girl must, in Obedience to this rigorous Custom, give her Hand to a Man whom she, perhaps, hates, without the least Signs of Reluctance. Whether such an absolute Power in Parents is authorised by the Laws of Nature, may, I think, be very justly called in Question. Nothing can be urged in Defence of it, but that as they are the Authors, or, more properly speaking, the Instruments of our Existence, they have a just Title to the Disposal of our Persons, without consulting our Inclinations. I am far from lessening the Parental Prerogative, tho' I cannot allow it this extensive Power, and my Reason is this: By our Religion we are taught that the Supreme Being left Man to the Freedom of his own Will, and only laid before him Happiness and Misery, as he obeyed or transgressed the Command; in like Manner, Parents may and, indeed, ought to lay before their Children all the Advantages and Disadvantages of a Marriage Contract, which their Want of Experience, and perhaps the Violence of Passions may prevent their adverting to, but to force their Assent to what they judge fittest for them, without having the least Regard to their Sentiments, is assuming a Power directly opposite

to

to the Method of Providence, and wantonly sacrificing the Happiness of a Child to satisfy Views which please themselves, and which Experience daily shews, are the Occasion of fatal Consequences, of which they must look upon themselves as the unhappy Authors, and at last have the Mortification to be made sensible, that they consulted their own mercenary or ambitious Satisfaction, not the Happiness of their Children. My Father's Conduct justifies my Opinion of this Matter. To this Hour I tremble, tho' I am none of your extremely timorous Women, when I reflect on his Rage and Fury when I owned my Affection to the Chevalier, and what cruel Usage I met with for not being able to banish him from my Heart.

Love inspired the Chevalier with such Eloquence that he soon prevailed with his Mother to use her Interest with his Father, who, tho' he yielded to her Sollicitations, had no great Hopes of Success with a Man of my Father's Character, and his Suspicions were but too well grounded; for when the *Marquis de Miremont* made the Proposal, he bluntly told him that, in the present Situation of his Family,

ly, he had other Views for his Daughter, than to dispose of her to a Gentleman's second Son. The Marquis was, no Doubt, surpris'd and nettled at such a Reception, but disguis'd his Resentment. I know, Sir, said he, that your Daughter, as an Heiress, may lay Claim to a better Fortune than what I can give to my second, or even my eldest Son ; but barring that, I can see no Disparagement in your Alliance with my Family. I own, continued he, that the Disproportion of Fortune, had I followed my own Sentiments, would have dissuaded me from proposing this Match, but my Son's Happiness, which I find entirely depends upon the Possession of your lovely Daughter, prevail'd with me to take this Step, the rather because I believe it will not be disagreeable to the young Lady who is the Object of his Wishes. I cannot think, cry'd my Father, with a violent Emotion, that my Daughter has been so presumptuous as to receive the Addresses of any Man without acquainting me, and knowing my Pleasure ; but if she has been so imprudent and undutiful, I will make her sensible of her Folly, and you will do well, Sir, to do so too with your Son, who must never expect to be my Son-in law. Nor ever desire

to be such, answered the Marquis with an Air of Indignation, if he consults any thing but a blind Passion; for my Part I think your Behaviour so unbecoming a Gentleman, that I from this Moment renounce all Correspondence and Friendship with you, and should probably take another Method of resenting this Affront, had I not strong Reasons to the contrary; and in saying this, he got up and left the Room, without giving my Father Time to reply, which was very lucky, for it would have, no Doubt, been dictated by Rage, and might have been the Occasion of Blood-shed in the very Place where they were. The Marquis's sudden Departure, without inquiring for me, left me no Room to doubt of the bad Success of our Project; and it was not long before I was but too well confirmed in my Conjecture; for he was not got a hundred Paces from the House when my Father, who had retired to his Closet, ordered me to be called, and tho' my Conscience accused me of no Crime, I went like a condemned Person. The Moment I entered the Closet he launched such a furious Look at me, that my Heart lost all Motion, my Sight failed me, and I dropped down upon the Floor without any Signs of Life;

Life; how long my fainting Fit continued I can't tell, but when I recovered my Senses, I found myself lying in my own Bed, to which I had been carried by my Father's Orders. Such a Scene as this, one would think, could hardly miss of moving a Heart that was capable of being moved; but as it convinced my Father that I had disposed of mine without his Consent, he only deferred my Punishment 'till I was in a Condition to feel all the Rigour of it. When he understood that I was perfectly recovered, he came to my Chamber, and ordering the Maid who attended me to retire, he thus addressed me. Were your poor Mother alive, what Affliction would it give her to find that she had brought into the World a Child who had made such a bad Use of all her Instructions! I am told that you have been carrying on a private Intrigue with the *Marquis de Miremont's* Son, and I think I need no other Proof to convince me of the Truth of it, than the Effects which the Consciousness of your own Guilt produced when I sent for you. I command you to let me know what Lengths this Affair is gone, that I may know the better what Course I am to take in order to avoid the Disgrace which your Folly, and perhaps something worse

worse may bring upon me, as well as yourself. This unjust Suspicion of my Virtue at once banished all my Terror, and provoked me so heinously that, without Hesitation, I spoke to him in the following sharp Manner. I am not ignorant, Sir, of the Respect which by the Laws of Heaven and Earth we are bound to pay to our Parents, and to my Knowledge I cannot accuse myself of having ever failed in that essential Part of my Duty, and as little do I think that any Action of my Life can have given you any just Ground of suspecting my Virtue, which I defy even Malice itself to sul-
ly. My Reputation is dearer to me than all earthly Considerations, and to see it attacked by my own Father is a thing so monstrously shocking that, not to resent it, would be, in a Manner, confirming your unjust Suspicions, to which I never will submit let the Consequence be what it will. As you gave me Life you may take it away, and I believe I shall have the Constancy to lose it without upbraiding you with Cruelty, but to attack my Honour is destroying me here and hereafter, and I cannot tamely submit to such an Indignity without complaining. As for the *Chevalier de Miremont* I will honestly own that the signal Service he rendered me,

joined to his personal Accomplishments have made an Impression upon my Heart, and that if it be my Fate ever to enter into a married State, I should be glad he were the Man; however, I can with the same Sincerity affirm, that while I have a Father, no Man shall be my Husband without his Consent and Approbation; and it was from this Knowledge of my Sentiments that he, no Doubt, prevailed with his Father to make a Proposal to you of an Alliance with his Family, which, for Reasons best known to yourself, you have, I suppose, rejected. I shall not presume to enquire into your Motives, 'tis my Business to submit, and to advise the Chevalier to abandon a fruitless Enterprize. I was greatly surpris'd that he had Patience to hear me tell my Story without Interruption; and I observed sometimes by his Looks that he was under violent Agitations of Mind, particularly when I was complaining, perhaps a little more bitterly than became me, of his injurious Suspicions; but you know how terrible it is to a modest Woman to be attacked in so tender a Part. After I had left off speaking, he seem'd for some Minutes to be wrapt up in a deep Contemplation; at last looking at me with Fury in his Eyes: The Wretch, cry'd

cry'd he, who is not only impudent enough to own a Passion for a young Fellow, but to exclaim against her Father in Terms so little respectful, deserves to have her Tongue cut out, that it may no more be the Interpreter of Sentiments so shameful, base and injurious; but I shall soon contrive another Method which will be a greater Punishment to you than the Loss of that worthless Member; in the mean Time make yourself ready to set out Tomorrow Morning by four o'Clock for *Paris*, where I intend to lodge you in a proper Place for Ladies of your amorous Disposition. You may lodge me, Sir, answered I, where you think proper, as you have the intire Disposal of my Person; but in the Midst of a Dungeon my Mind will be free, and you will find that all the Cruelties you can invent, will not be capable to make me ungrateful towards a Person who saved my Life. I can easily foresee, continued I, that it would be lost Labour to plead for Mercy from a Judge who, feeling no natural Impulses, breathes nothing but Revenge and Punishments; but let what will happen, I am prepared, and will still have this Satisfaction to support me under my Sufferings, that I am not conscious of having deserved

them. We shall soon see, cry'd he with the Voice of Thunder, whether this so much boasted Courage of thine will stand the Tryal which it shall soon be put to, and with that left the Room, and me to reflect on my dismal Fate; dismal, indeed, on many Accounts. A Mother lately dead, a Father enraged, a Lover disconsolate, and my own poor Heart almost broke. Is thy Courage, poor unthinking Creature, said I to myself, capable of stemming such an impetuous Torrent? And will it not highly divert thy cruel Father to find that thou art a Heroine only in Words? Shall I then fall at his Feet, confess my Weakness, and implore his Pardon? Let me see. --- If I stand my Ground I am condemned to a Convent for Life, that's shocking. If I plead guilty, I betray my Lover and break my own Heart, worse and worse. Perhaps my Father, finding that nothing can shake my Constancy, will, at last relent, and who knows but Heaven may touch his Heart. Fortune favours the Bold, and whoever keeps up to the strict Rules of Honour triumphs at last. Be gone therefore ye slavish Fears. Let Cowardice for ever be banished from my Breast. Let me
stand

stand the Shocks of Fortune with a noble Courage, and hope that Providence will dissipate the threatened Storm. Wonderful were the Effects of this sententious Soliloquy : My Imagination was no longer struck with the frightful Prospect of what had alarmed me : My Mind was elevated with that inward Joy which flows from a noble Resolution, and my Heart glowed with the pleasing Thoughts of a gallant Defence of its Rights and Privileges. Wrapt up in Sentiments so noble, so sublime, (which, perhaps, you may call enthusiastic Raptures) you'll expect something extraordinary in the Letter you are now going to read, which Vanity at that Time dictated, that my Lover might admire and imitate my Heroism, and which now, in my cooler Thoughts, appears to be the Product of a heated Imagination : But since I am resolved not even to conceal my greatest Weaknesses from you, such as it is, here you have it.

To the Chevalier de Miremont.

Sir,

YOUR Father's Reception from mine has, no Doubt, highly provoked him, and afflicted you; and were I not persuaded that you are not to be dashed by little Rubs which we meet with in Life, I should not, perhaps, acquaint you, that To-morrow Morning I go for Paris, where, probably, I am to be a Prisoner for Life. I have reasoned myself into a Stoical Sort of Belief, that, in Love as in Religion, Persecution is absolutely necessary to keep us zealously attached to what we might otherwise turn very cool upon: We Women, particularly, have that pretty Turn in our Constitution, so that my Father is very much out in his Politicks, if he imagines that shutting me up in a Cloister will banish you from my Heart. Let Iron Grates bar me from Society; let peevish discontented Nuns ease their own Load of Misery by augmenting mine; let my Body be extenuated with Austerities; my Conduct, nay, even my Virtue, be exclaimed against with all the bitter invectives of hypocritical Monks and Nuns; and, in

in short, let me suffer in Body and Mind what is most shocking to human Nature, Vanity, with a little Mixture of dear Pride, and the Spirit of Contradiction, will enable me to make a gallant Stand; and if I continue in my present Way of thinking, my Father, with all the monastic Tools, whom he has list'd into his Service, will find it a hard Work to reduce this little stubborn Heart of mine. If I am allowed Pen and Paper, and can contrive it so as to get a Letter conveyed to the Post-Office, you may expect a faithful Account of my Adventures, with some curious Remarks on the Manners and Customs of those pious Females who have abandoned the World, and devoted themselves wholly to the Service of Heaven. If I do not execute this Promise, you may attribute it to the Want of Power, but still be assured that my Enemies shall never bring me to capitulate on dishonourable Terms, nor even to alter the present Disposition of my Heart, which is more yours than perhaps ought, in Strictness, to be acknowledged, and which, in other Circumstances, my Modesty or my Pride would certainly have condemned as a mean Condescension; but as this Letter may be, for what I know, my dying Speech, I am glad before I go out of the World to leave this Testimony behind me, with which you
can

can confound my Enemies, should they dare to asperse my Memory; besides, I shall have the Pleasure to think that I will triumph over them after I am dead and gone. But why should I anticipate Misfortunes, which, perhaps, never will exist? Let us hope for the best; and this you may take for granted, that if I find there's no Plot against my Life, I will lead them such a Dance that they will be heartily wearied of my Company. This Letter is committed to the Care of your good Friend the Nurse, who knowing how handsomely you pay Postage, will, I dare say, deliver it into your Hands, and no body's else; so that I am in no Pain of its Miscarriage; and if you would oblige me, you'll be under no Concern for this whimsical Journey of mine, since I leave my better Part with you to guarrantee our Treaty signed with your Blood, and which I solemnly promised should never be broke by

Felicité de Biron.

THE first Thing I did, after receiving my Father's last Orders, was to write the long Scrawl which you have now, I suppose with very little Satisfaction, read, and next, to send for the Chevalier's faithful Messenger, under
pre-

pretence of employing her, as she was a handy Sort of a Creature, in putting my Things into Trunks. I cannot but laugh when I think with what Raptures she seized on the Letter, and what Blessings she gave me, for affording her an Opportunity of once more seeing the dear Gentleman, she meant his dear Purse.

My Father was so punctual to his Promise, that I was called out of Bed by three o'Clock next Morning, and before four was placed in a Chaise with our old Chaplain for my Companion, who was to be my Conductor to the Place appointed for my Jail, which I firmly believed was to be at *Paris*, but I was greatly mistaken, and not a little alarmed when I found that we took quite different a Road. I thought, Sir, said I to my Conductor, that my Father had intended to send me to *Paris*, but if that be the Place, we are not, it seems, to follow the common Road. I am not at Liberty, said he, to tell you your Father's Intentions; all I can say is, that we are going to a Place much farther off than *Paris*, and neither I nor the Persons with whom I am to leave you are allowed to give you the least Knowledge of it, for Reasons that your Father did

did not think proper to communicate to me. Come, come, Abbé, said I laughing, tho' I was, to tell the Truth, in no merry Mood, my Father, I suppose, has employ'd you to carry me to some desert Island, or perhaps to tie me to a Tree in the Midst of some Forest, where I shall have no *Miremonts* to protect me from Bears and Wolfs. No, no, Madam, cry'd he a little-piqued, I suppose, at my giving him such an honourable Employment, I have no Orders to leave you in Desarts, or to expose you to wild Beasts, but to put you in a Place where you will learn many good Things, and particularly to respect your Father's Commands, tho' they may clash with your Inclinations. I shall not trouble you with a Description of five Days Journey, in which nothing happened worth being repeated, except that when my Governor turned impertinent in his Admonitions, I confounded him with all the wild extravagant Things that I could think of, and every now and then, to give a Weight to what I said, slap't first one Cheek and then the other, not gently I assure you. On the sixth Day from our Departure, we began to climb Mountains whose Tops reached the Clouds, and where we saw nothing but Rocks, Trees,

Trees, and frightful Precipices for several Miles ; at last we descended into a little Sort of a Valley, on the Prospect of which, with a Convent in the Middle of it, I could observe visible Signs of Joy in my Abbe's Eyes, who had look'd very morose all the Morning, and had not so much as opened his Mouth. Ho, ho, said I, good Pilot, if I may judge by your Looks, here's the Harbour where I suppose we shall come to Anchor, and where you are to unload your Cargo, which I dare say you'll be glad to get rid of. Come, my faithful Guide, one Slap more before we part never to meet again. No, no, cry'd he holding up his Hands to cover his Cheeks, I have got enough of your Favours this Way already, and if I don't repay them in kind, I hope those who succeed me will ; I made two or three Attempts to be at him, but he held my Hands, and I was forced to content myself with spitting in his Face, which so provok'd him, that he squeez'd my Hands with his strong lubberly Fists till he made me squeak ; but as Women seldom want Expedients when they are hard put to it, I fell a kicking his Legs with my Timber heeled Shoes which soon made him quit his Hold, and I believe in my Conscience that if we had not
been

been just at the Entry of the Convent, a terrible scratching Battle must have ensued. Now you must know that the Prioress of this Convent of *Ursuline* Nuns was his Aunt, an old surly Creature who made herself unhappy and every body about her. If my Father had searched all over the Kingdom he could not have found a fitter Person for his Purpose than this old crabbed Matron, and no Doubt but his honest Chaplain had informed him of her Character. We were introduced at first into a large Parlour, and the Abbé sent his Name by a Nun who came to enquire our Business, and desired a private Interview with his Aunt. The Nun's Back was no sooner turned, than I brushed up to my right Reverend, whose Cheeks still glowed with my former Kindnesses, and not doubting but that I was going to renew them, he put himself in a Posture of Defence. Stand your Ground, *Monsieur l'Abbé*, said I softly, your Cheeks and Legs are now safe, my flapping Humour is over, and I have only this to tell you, that if I find my bad Treatment here is owing to your good Offices with this Aunt of yours, joined to what my Father, no Doubt, desires in his Letter to her, I shall, some Time or other, employ a stronger Arm

Arm than my own to give you a hearty Drubbing. You know I'm a Woman of my Word, therefore no double Dealing, good Mr. Chaplain, if you have any Regard to your own dear Carcass. He was just opening his Mouth to make me an Answer, when the Nun appeared again at the Grate, and desired him to step into a little Parlour opposite to this where the Prioress waited for him, and where they were to consult together about my Ladyship. Two long Hours did I wait, the Nun coming and going and teizing me with a great many Questions, to which I answered by the Monasyllables of yes and no. At last Orders came to carry the Prisoner to the Bar, which I approached not with that Fear and Trembling which my Judges perhaps expected, but with an easy Air and Looks perfectly composed. After some Moments Silence, the Prioress staring at me and I at her, at last she told me, in the affected Convent Cant, that as she was perfectly informed, both by my Father's Letter, and the Abbé's Report, of my unhappy Distemper, she, in Conjunction with the whole Sisterhood of the Community, would invoke incessantly the Blessed Virgin and all the Saints for my Recovery; and that she hoped, by such

Intercession, with proper Remedies and Mortifications of the Flesh, to dissipate the Vapour that disturbed my Brain, and had rendered me delirious. I could not for my Life help laughing, which confirmed the old Creature in her Notion of my being mad; so turning to the Abbé, I now see that 'tis plainly so, poor Creature, it would be lost Labour to speak to her in her present unhappy Condition: Our Doctor must be called to consider of her Case, and to put her under a proper Course of Physic: A spare Diet, frequent Bleedings and Purgings will, I suppose, be what he'll think proper to order at first. Ay, ay, cry'd the cursed Chaplain, her Blood is hot and she's full of Humours; I could with Pleasure have bit off his Nose, or tore out his Eyes, so mad was I with this Impostor; but as I now found that violent Measures would be looked upon as the Effects of Madness, I resolved to be cool, and only ask'd the Prioress very calmly, that she would give me leave to tell her my Story, after which she might judge whether she had been imposed upon or not. We shall have Time enough for that, answered she, shaking her Head, when you have repos'd a little after your fatiguing Journey; with that she rung the little Bell, and
pre-

presently entered a Nun whom I had not before seen, a most beautiful young Creature, and had such a Sweetness in her Countenance, that I could not help admiring her. There is something very odd in the sudden Effects of Sympathy; I found my Heart seized, as it were, with a strong Desire to offer her my Friendship and to desire her's, and she has since told me that she felt the same Desires, and was resolved to do all that lay in her Power to procure my Esteem and Confidence. Sister *Teresa*, said the Prioress, as you are yet in the Year of your Noviciate, I resolve to give you the Charge of this young Lady, who having the Misfortune of being now and then disturbed in her Brain, will give you an Opportunity of exercising a very christian Patience, which is none of the least Proofs of a real Vocation to a religious Life, if you go thro' it with that Chearfulness and Resignation that becometh one of your Profession; and were it not that Charity forbids our rejoicing at the Misfortunes of our Fellow-Creatures, you have in this Melancholy Employment Cause of Joy, since thereby Providence throws in your Way an Occasion of putting your Patience to a very severe Tryal. ——— Here my good Friend the Abbe

finding it a fit Time to throw in his Squib, interrupted the old Matron's Theological Flow, and very gravely harangued us in some such Words as these, directing his Discourse to her Ladyship. I own, Madam, said he, that to be charged with an Employment such as you are pleased to assign to Sister *Teresa*, must be very disagreeable to a Person in their right Senses, and requires no small Degree of Resignation to discharge it faithfully; but we must by no means imagine that a Keeper who patiently bears all Manner of Insults and Indignities from one who is delirious, does by such a Behaviour faithfully discharge the Trust reposed in him: Madness has many Causes; some proceeding from Bodily Distempers, others from Disorders in the Mind, and among these, Love may be first ranked, as being what Youth of both Sexes are most exposed to, when they cannot surmount the Obstacles that are thrown in their Way; this, alas! is the Case of this unhappy young Woman, whom I have, by her Father's Order, brought to this Convent, and who must not, by a Tenderness such as fond Mothers have, who cannot bear the Thoughts of whipping their Children let them be guilty of what they please, be indulg'd
in

in her extravagant Love to an imaginary Knight, who she fancies killed a wild Bear ready to devour her : she will, no Doubt, often entertain Sister *Teresa* with the Valour and other Accomplishments of the *Chevalier de Miremont*, and utter terrible Complaints against her Father's pretended Cruelty, not sparing even me who have been her Conductor hither, and who have been most unmercifully beat by her upon the Road every Time that her Fit took her ; so that my Advice is, that her Body be kept under with fasting, and that she be heartily disciplined twice a Day at least, which, with the Doctor's Assistance, may, I hope, banish this wild Chimera that has got Possession of her poor Brain : This is, Madam, what I thought myself obliged to let you know, that neither you nor Sister *Teresa* might be deceived by her talking upon every other Subject, except this, with as much Solidity and Judgment as any Woman in *France* ; but you'll find that the Moment you mention Love or Knight-Errantry, she'll tell you the whole Story of her *Don Quixote's* having jumped over a River, when a monstrous wild Bear was ready to devour her ; give you a pompous Description of the Combat, (tho' at the same

Time she lay in a deep Swoon) tell you how nobly her gallant Deliverer stood his Ground against this furious Animal, and how, after a terrible Battle in which he received a Wound, he at last laid his Enemy lifeless at his Feet ; how the courteous Knight went home with her and lay at her Father's House 'till he was cured of his Wound ; and then she'll proceed to a thousand Stories about the Progress of their Passion, which I shall not repeat, and only tell you in general that they are all mere Fiction. Good Heavens, cry'd I, is it possible that there's such a Monster in the holy Order of Priesthood ! Well, I must do him this Justice to own that he's the first Man in the Kingdom at giving to Fable the Air of Truth, and I ought not to be surpris'd if all the Ladies in this Convent really believe me to be mad : As this is the Case, it would be quite needless so much as to attempt to dissipate the Mist which he has so artfully thrown over their Eyes. I would only observe one Thing, Madam, addressing myself particularly to the Prioress, that there's an infallible Way to discover the Malice and Falshood of this base Impostor, but till my Behaviour has got the better of your present Prepossession, I shall not so much as attempt

attempt it, only give me leave to tell you, that as I have no Occasion for Medicines, nor am resolved to take any, I must beg the Favour of you not to trouble yourself nor me with Doctors : And now, Madam, continued I, I am ready to enter within these Grates to take Possession of the Cell you are pleased to allot me, where I hope I shall not be long, 'till you are convinced, notwithstanding the Efforts of this Tool, pointing to the Abbé, of my Father's Indignation, that I have been greatly injured, and you monstrously imposed upon. I wish, said she, that I may find your Words prove true, and that your Family may soon find you in a Condition to be recalled ; in the mean Time if you'll follow Sister *Teresa* she will conduct you to your Chamber, and we shall in a few Days be able to judge how the Case is with you. I could not leave the Field without firing my last Gun at the Abbé. You have taken an effectual Way, Sir, said I to him, to be revenged for the ill Usage you received from me upon the Road, which I thought due to a Man who undertook such a base Employment, and for which, perhaps, some Day or other you'll get no Thanks even from the Person who employ'd you ; for you know, as
well

well as I, that my Father is of a changeable Temper, and who knows but Nature, when the first Impulse of his Anger is over, may do its own Work, and, from me now the Object of his Indignation, turn to you, who, instead of calming his first Transports, blindly obeyed his Commands, without the least Remonstrance, or Attempt to pacify him. Is it not the Duty of every Clergyman placed in a Family to endeavour to heal up Breaches rather than to widen them? Would it not have been acting in Character, to have exhorted me to abandon an Attachment which was not agreeable to my Father, to whom I owed the Sacrifice of my Inclinations, without Reserve? And if you found me, after all, obstinate, the World, nay even I myself, could not have condemned your Proceedure: Your own Conscience, Sir, will tell you whether you ought not to have acted in this Manner, and whether I had not just Reason to treat you in the Way I did. I am now glad, in the Presence of the Lady Priores, to let you know the Motives of so extraordinary a Behaviour, and which indeed, when told to any indifferent Person, who was ignorant of the real Motives, must pass for the Height of Madness, and could not well miss of
gaining

gaining intire Belief, as the Charge was laid by such a Man as you. I know very well that when my Back's about, you'll soon overturn the Battery I have been endeavouring to rear at your Expence. I am not ignorant of your Art in making up a plausible Story ; and you have besides, from the Prépossession already fettled, a vast Advantage over me, who have the Honour to pass for a Creature delirious ; but take this along with you, that tho' Innocence and Truth may be clouded for a while, yet they will sooner or later appear in their true Colours ; and this is so certain, that I defy all the Malice of the Devil or Men to prevent it. Farewel, Abbé, if you have Honesty enough to tell my Father that tho' I cannot, perhaps, mould my Inclinations so as to chime in with his Views, yet still he shall have the absolute Disposal of my Person ; at least this I can solemnly promise, that, without his Consent, no Man shall ever call me Wife ; but at the same Time I hope his Indulgence will go so far as this, that if what would make me happy in the Matrimonial State, cannot be granted, he'll allow me to pass my Days within these Grates or some such Place. Now, Madam, said I turning to the Prioress, give the
Word

Word of Command, and I march off the Stage. She gave a Nod to Sister *Teresa* whom I followed. When we arrived at my little Habitation, *Teresa* shut the Door, and we began a familiar Conversation. Madam, said she, it would be a monstrous Presumption in me to desire or expect, that you would place the least Confidence in a Person so much a Stranger to you as I am, and whatever Inclination I may have to be admitted into the Number of your Friends, I dare not ask it 'till such time as my little Services, or rather, 'till my Openness and Frankness with you, may encourage you to trust me with your Concerns. It is not, I assure you, Madam, my usual Custom to intrude myself upon Strangers, or to be curious to know their Affairs, (a Failing which you'll soon perceive reigns within these Walls) but I find my Heart attracted towards you so forcibly, that I cannot hinder myself from speaking to you in a quite different Language from what is practised in this Place, and to assure you with all the Sincerity imaginable that in serving you I find I please myself. I am overjoy'd, my dear Sister, said I, to find your Sentiments so much of a Piece with my own. I contracted, from the first Moment I saw you,
such

such a Friendship, that I flattered myself to find, in a mutual and sincere Confidence with you, a Person who would at least pity me, and not attribute my Confinement to what was assigned maliciously as the Cause ; and to convince you, my dear Friend, (allow me the familiar Expression) that I am sincere in what I say, when you think proper, and have a spare Minute to throw away, you shall know all my Story, which has indeed nothing very singular or entertaining in it, but will unravil the Myſtery of my being ſent to this remote Place, and give you a juſt Notion of that Wretch who accompanied me. And I, ſaid ſhe, in return of that Confidence, will commit to your Diſcretion what I would not upon any Conſideration truſt to any but yourſelf in this Place ; but, continued ſhe, we muſt refer the mutual Narration of our Adventures, 'till I find we may do it without Interruption. In the mean Time (my dear Friend, for you have authoriſed me to make uſe of that Appellation) be upon your Guard with all our Nuns 'till I have let you into their ſeveral Characters : They will flatter, careſs, and appear to outvie one another in their Offers of Service, and the Reason or Politic of this you
ſhall

shall ere long know ; with some 'tis Designs, with others mere Curiosity, but with neither the one nor the other any real Intention of serving you. You'll be startled at such a Character, and perhaps think me a little too free with the *Religious Ladies* of this Convent, but I speak my real Sentiments to you as they stand within my own Breast, and sorry I am to say it, that you'll find them but too true. The Duties of my Employment oblige me now to leave you, for the Members of this Society may be properly enough called Machines, that move with as much Regularity, from the Beginning to the End of the Year, as Pendulum-Clocks ; and in this Regularity of Motion lies, I am afraid, the only Merit that most of us can lay Claim to ; but I shall enlarge upon this Subject when we have a proper Opportunity ; in the mean Time, let me beg of you not to be discouraged ; for if you can submit to certain little Condescensions you may get into the good Graces of our Prioress, and thereby render this Place more supportable than otherwise it would be. As you are so good, my dear Friend, said I, clasping her in my Arms, to take me under your Protection, I will be entirely governed by your Advice ; and I, said she,

she, returning my Caresses, shall always make it my Business to give you no Advice but what I think may tend to your Advantage: With that she left the Room, and me to entertain myself with my noble Thoughts. I consider'd that I was now a Prisoner, deprived of dear Liberty, and subjected to the Caprice of an old peevish Nun, who thinks it meritorious to make those miserable and unhappy who are under her Government; but, said I to myself, as I am now got into her Clutches, it would be real Madness not to temporise, tho' one's Spirit is not easily brought to such mean and servile Cringing: Down then with your high Airs now, good *Mademoiselle Biron*. Let this little proud Heart of thine know that Stubbornness is punished here with the Rod of Correction, and that the Governesses of such Female Commonwealths are more absolute than any Monarch upon Earth: They cannot, 'tis true, take off Heads, but they can starve to Death, which is a sure, tho' a slower, Way of sending People to the other World; and what is strangely whimsical, some of the deluded Creatures, whom they intend to dispatch, think they are the Instruments of sending them to Heaven, for which they thank them in their

last Agonies. With these and a thousand other Reflections of the same Kind, did I pass away a couple of Hours, when I had the Pleasure of seeing my dear Friend *Teresa* come jumping into my little Apartment, and embracing me with a Transport that could not flow but from a Heart sensibly touched. I have now, my Dear, said she, two good Hours to bestow upon you, and we must not lose a Minute of that precious Time. Come, begin your Story, and be sure not to abridge it: When it comes to my Turn you may expect to hear of such a Series of Disappointments and Misfortunes, that you'll be surpris'd how a Girl of my Age could go thro' them, and not sink under the heavy Load. I now find verified, in my own Person, that prevailing Notion among Men, that Grief is not capable of killing our Sex. I formerly thought this Opinion quite absurd, but I am now of a different Sentiment, which is founded on my own proper Experience, and which, I dare say, you will allow to be just, when I have told you my melancholy Story; but as your's, my dear Miss, is first in course, I hope you'll put a Stop to my Prattle, by entering directly upon it. My Adventures, said I smiling, will soon
be

Be related, as there is neither much of Variety, nor of Singularity in them; but a good deal too much of what may be justly termed Heedlessness and Imprudence, which I am afraid you'll condemn, particularly when I come to the Surrender of my Heart upon so short an Attack. I know, continued I, that according to the established Maxims in the Circles of the *Beau Monde*, a fine Lady ought to stand a Twelve Months Siege, at least, before she capitulates; and I must own, to my Confusion, that, according to the best of my Memory, I did not stand out, I mean my Heart did not stand its Ground, twelve Minutes before it yielded itself Prisoner at Discretion. Will not you, my dear Friend, condemn this foolish cowardly Heart of mine, which has so voluntarily submitted to the Loss of its Liberty, and, which is still worse, is so pleased with its Chains that it glories in them? No, no, cried she, I know the Foibles of my own Heart too well to pronounce any severe Sentence upon your's, of which I am fond to know the Situation, not so much from a Curiosity to which Women are naturally so much addicted, as from an earnest Desire of doing you what Service lies in my Power. But at the same Time I must frankly

tell you that I hope to draw the same good Offices from your Friendship, which I would incline to render you; and tho' it should happen that neither of us can do any material Service to her Friend, yet still, from a mutual Confidence and Openness of Heart, there results this Satisfaction, that we pity one another, and, as it were, unite our Forces against the Enemies of our Happiness. For my Part, continued she, I find my Breast already eased of half its Load of Misery, by the pleasing Idea of having now a Friend to whom I can, with Safety, communicate my Thoughts. — But I don't reflect that at the same Time I am pressing you to relate the History of your Life, I am preventing you by frivolous Observations, but I am now silent, and ready to hear with Attention what you think proper to let me know.

You shall be obeyed, said I, but I must once more tell you, that if you expect any thing curious and entertaining, you'll be disappointed; however, you shall have it such as it is; and the only Merit of it lies in this, that not only my Words and Actions, but my most secret Thoughts are laid open to your View, which

which will cost me, perhaps, some Blushes ; but I have, I hope, an indulgent Judge, who will make some Allowance for the Want of Experience. I then began with an Account of my Family, on which my Vanity made me enlarge, in order to give my Friend an exalted Notion of my Birth, which in my own foolish Conceit would, I thought, attach her more strongly to my Interest ; and foolish indeed it was to imagine, that a Lady of her fine Sense would esteem one who had not personal Merit, for the Sake of her Ancestors. I then proceeded to give her a short Account of my Education, of my Father and Mother's Characters, and thereafter related, Word for Word, what is written in this Manuscript. I cannot think, said she sighing, your Case quite so desperate as you may perhaps imagine ; 'tis true your Father seems to be a Man of a violent Temper, and this Obstacle to his Views, with Regard to you, may induce him to think of a second Marriage, as he has now no more Children but yourself ; if this should happen, his next Step would be to force you to embrace a religious Life. Do you not think, my dear Friend, continued she, that it would be more prudent in you to abandon an Amour which your Father

opposes, than, by persisting in it, to renounce the World : Besides, are you sure that the *Chevalier de Miremont*, who is young and giddy, will continue faithful to his Engagements, notwithstanding your Absence and the Temptation of other Objects ? I am not at all of the Opinion of most of our Sex that Men are all false, my own Experience shews me the contrary ; but 'till we have such incontestible Proofs of their Fidelity, that we can depend upon them, no prudent Woman ought, in my Opinion, to engage her Heart irrevocably. I would advise you to write to him and let him know where you are ; I will get your Letter safely conveyed to the Post-Office, and his Answer may be sent under Cover to a Friend of mine, who will carefully forward it to me. We shall then see, added she smiling, how the young Gentleman's Pulse beats, and if he deserves the noble Stand you intend to make on his Behalf. My dearest Sister, said I, your Reflections are solid and just, but you'll excuse me if I judge that you speak as one unacquainted with the tender Passions, or as one who would advise her Friend to avoid the Rock she herself split upon. You'll find, answered she, when you know more about me, that

that you are mistaken on both Sides, and that the Precautions I have been soliciting you to observe, neither proceed from my Want of Experience, nor Disappointments from a Lover, but intirely from the Dread I am under of your not meeting with that Constancy in the young Chevalier which your Affection to him deserves; but I shall be better able to judge when I see by his Letter how he bears your Absence, and what he proposes. I will therefore leave you a Moment that you may be at Liberty to write, and I will take Care to get your Letter sent off To-morrow Morning; and remember that you must desire the Answer may be sent under a Cover directed for *Monsieur de Villebranche* at *Clermont, High Auvergne*, and let his Letter be addressed to Sister *Teresa* without any thing more; it will be sent here the Moment it comes to his Hands in the same Manner that my Letters come, and no Mortal in this Convent, notwithstanding the Vigilance of our Nuns, know any thing of the Matter. I am glad to find, said I, that *Auvergne* is the Place of my Exile, which is more agreeable to me than *Paris* itself, since if I had been sent there, I should never probably had the Happiness of knowing
the

the lovely *Teresa*; and as our unlucky Chaplain was the Means of bringing this about, I am now sorry that I used him with so much Harshness upon the Road, tho' he had no Intention of obliging me. I will, since it is your Advice, write to *Mr. de Miremont*, who, if I am not greatly mistaken, is in some Pain about me. He will be very much surpris'd, after what I had wrote to him of my setting out for *Paris*, to receive a Letter from this remote Corner, to which Place my Father intended, it seems, I should come, tho' he mentioned the other, when he ordered me to make myself ready for the Journey. My Friend left me, and I that Moment took up the Pen and wrote what follows.

To the *Chevalier de Miremont*, at *Miremont-Castle*, in *Poitou*.

Sir,

AS I am scrupulously punctual to my Promises, I take this Opportunity of letting you know the Place of my Confinement, which, instead of *Paris* as I imagined, happens to be among the wild Rocks of *Auvergne*.

OUR

OUR honest Chaplain, (who was my Conductor to this Convent, where his Relation is Prioress) and I happening not to agree so well as could be wished on the Road, he did me the Favour, imagining that I had used him a little roughly, to persuade the Prioress that Love had turned my Brain, for which Reason my Father had been obliged to send me thither under his Care. The Nuns, who are not as yet undeceived, fancy that the Chevalier de Miremont is my imaginary Don Quixote, and that the Story of the killing the Bear, and of your being wounded are mere Phantoms of a disordered Imagination. I am perfectly easy about their Opinion of my Madness. A little Time, with the Assistance of a charming young Novice with whom I have contracted a great Intimacy, will get the better of their present Prepossession; and as for the Course of Physick which this malicious Dog of an Abbé absolutely insisted that I should be directly put under, by my Father's positive Commands, I must beg to be excused; and if they insist upon it the Prioress and I will have a deadly Quarrel. I suppose my Father intends to have a second Wife, and to make a Nun of my Ladyship, and therefore, Sir, it will be Prudence in you to think

think no more of me, but as one who, out of Gratitude, is obliged to put up her Prayers for your Preservation; and I really think, all things duly considered, I must even endeavour to reconcile myself to the monastic Life, for I know my Father's inexorable Temper too well, to flatter myself that he will ever consult my Happiness; and, on the other Hand, as all Correspondence is now at an End between our two Families, your's will be as averse to a Match with his Daughter, as he seems to be with the Son of the Marquis de Miremont; so that it will be the next Thing to a Miracle if ever you and I should be joined in the holy Bands of Wedlock. However, as we are neither of us old, if you can allow your Heart to remain, for a few Years, where you lately told me it was, I will promise you to take a very particular Care of it, and, by Way of Surety, leave mine in Pledge with you, till we mutually agree to return each their own, or to unite them for ever. Some would be apt to call this a whimsical Proposal, and were our old Prioress to see this Part of my Letter, she would think me a downright Mad-cap; but let her and all such bigotted Zealots think what they please, I insist that it is a fair and honourable Proposal, to ask no more than what one is willing to give. I confess that
by

by such a Treaty as this, I suppose a Constancy in Affection, which perhaps neither of us can keep up to, and particularly you who may have Occasion to see Objects who will make you regret the Absence of a Heart which otherwise would have been at their Service. Well, if this should happen at any Time to be your Case, to show you how good natured I am, I will, upon a humble Petition, restore your Pledge, and take back my own, tho' I shall not, perhaps, otherwise dispose of it.

I must not conclude this Letter without begging the Favour of you to contrive, some how or other, to see and thank our Chaplain, for assuring the Ladies here that you never existed but in my Imagination. You are, indeed, oftener there than, perhaps, is convenient for my Repose; but there's a Mixture of Pleasure and Pain in thinking of absent Friends, particularly in such a silent solitary Place as this, and I often indulge myself that Way.

MY dear Sister Teresa, who is the charming Acquaintance I have got here, sends this Letter to her Friend Mr. de Villebranche at Clermont, and you must direct your Answer to Sister Teresa under his Cover. Adieu; if we conclude
the

the proposed Treaty, who knows but we may meet and ratify so as to render it indissoluble; and tho' my dear Friend should chide me, I must honestly own that such a Conclusion would be agreeable to

Felicité de Biron.

SISTER Teresa entered just as I had finished my Letter, which I put into her Hand, and told her, smiling, that I believed she would think me a very whimsical Sort of a Damsel, to mention Treaties and Bartering of Hearts. I am very glad, said she, to find that Love sits so light upon you as it does, and, if I judge right, the Loss of a Lover will not break your Heart. How happy would it be, added she, with a deep Sigh, for some Persons of my Acquaintance were they of such a Temper. That Sigh, my dear Friend, cry'd I, plainly intimates whom you mean, and I hope you will allow me to put you in mind of your Promise, which I long to have performed without any farther Delay. Alas! Miss, said she, with Tears in her Eyes, my Life is made up of nothing but melancholy Scenes and tragical Events, and unless you have a Pleasure in
shed-

shedding Tears, my Story can give you no Diversion. I know your compassionate Nature will be moved by the Distresses of one whom you honour with the Title of Friend, and therefore I ought not to give you Cause of Uneasiness, by the Narration of my deplorable Story. But if you absolutely insist upon it, I will be as good as my Word, not verbally, but by putting into your Hands a Manuscript, in which you will find all the Accidents of my Life ; but remember that you have yourself to blame, not me, if you meet with such shocking Things as will make you repent of your Curiosity. Tho' there's not the least Circumstance of my unhappy Adventures but what is fresh in my Memory, as there are many Incidents interwoven with my Story, I chuse rather to give you it in Writing than otherwise, for more than one Reason, the principal whereof is, your being at Liberty to throw by the Manuscript when you imagine the Subject too deeply melancholy, or otherwise disagreeable ; and my being exempted from the Confusion I should be often put under, were I to repeat what you'll have Occasion to read. I have only one thing more to add, before I give you Access to all the Secrets and Follies of my unhappy

VOL. I. L happy

happy Life, viz. that you make me a solemn Promise not to oppose my Resolution of ending my Days in this House, whatever Reasons you may have to combat such a Design: I know you will think me unpardonably delicate, or rather superstitiously nice upon a certain Point, which ought to be no Bug-bear to a Woman of the strictest Virtue; but I must be allowed my Peculiarity in this Particular, and shall beg that my dear Miss *Biron* will attribute my Obstinacy to the Influence of a superior Power, which represents Things to my Imagination in a very different Light from what others see them. I will readily confess, that a young Nobleman has been at great Pains to make me relinquish a Design, which, with Respect to myself, he treats as a presumptuous Aspiring to move in a Sphere to which I have no Vocation, and must consequently lie far beyond my Reach; and with Regard to him, as a barbarous Cruelty, in cutting off all his Hopes of future Happiness. My Reason acknowledges the Force of his Arguments; my Heart supports his Attack; and yet, my Friend, I am resolved, from the Regard alone that I have for his Welfare and Happiness, to put it out of my own, or his
Power

Power, to act a Part which might give the rigid World an Opportunity of reflecting on my Ambition, or his Weakness. The Grandeur of his Family requires an Alliance, that will not diminish but rather add to its Lustre; and shall I, a Wretch sprung from obscure Parents, destitute of Fortune, with no other Qualifications but what Thousands of my Sex possess, perhaps, in a more eminent Degree, be necessary to throw a Blemish upon a Nobleman's Character, whom I value a Thousand Times more than my own Life, with no other View but to gratify a Passion, which, tho' violent now, may, by Enjoyment, and the Changes to which we are by Nature subjected, lose its Force, and let him see, when too late, the Folly of his Rashness? The natural Result whereof would, no Doubt, be, at first, melancholy Reflections on his own imprudent Conduct, and this must of Course lead him, by Degrees, to a Hatred of the Cause, now, perhaps, stript of those delusive Charms which at first kindled up the Flame in his Heart. If, out of a Principle of Generosity and Good-Nature, he should not come to an open Rupture with a Person whom he must look upon as an Obstacle to the Grandeur of his House, would

he not be exposed to all the Miseries of a discontented Mind? And would not my Condition, in that Case, be more wretched than it can possibly now be by the Sacrifice to which I condemn myself? At first Sight, this Action of mine will have a generous Aspect, but as I neither design to impose upon the World, and far less upon one whom I so particularly esteem as I do you, I must fairly own that Vanity comes in for a Share. Methinks I see some Years hence (for you know that visionary Prospects include Futurity as well as the Present) this very Nobleman (who is now my Slave, and who would sacrifice all Honours and Grandeurs to the Happiness of my Possession) blest with an accomplished Spouse of an equal Rank and Fortune to his own, and as fond of him as I possibly could be: I see her fondly lolling on his Bosom, and three or four pretty little Children attempting, by a natural Impulse of Love, to climb upon his Knees to share in the Pleasure which they fancy their Mother enjoys in her happy Position. When this Scene is past, I see him in his Closet where by Accident he throws his Eyes on a Letter from me wherein I plainly tell him that *Tho' I love his Person with all the Ardour that a violent Passion*

can

can inspire, yet I should think myself unworthy of his Esteem, and guilty of a Baseness which I should hate myself for, did I prefer my own Satisfaction to his Glory and the Interest of his Family; let therefore (continues the Letter) your Attachment to me the unhappy Play-thing of Fortune pass as an agreeable Dream which amused while it lasted, but which must vanish the Moment you are called to a more solid Way of thinking, &c. Here he throws down the Letter, and methinks I hear him distinctly pronounce these Words: From what a terrible Catastrophe has this generous Girl's Prudence preserved me! O Fortune! Partial Fortune! She surely deserved better at thy Hand.

To imagine that such will be his Sentiments, and probably his Language of my disinterested Behaviour, when he is married in a Manner suitable to his Rank and Quality, and to the Satisfaction of his illustrious Family, is no airy Flight of a romantic Brain; and do you think, my dearest Friend, that I can more agreeably flatter my Vanity than by such Ideas? He will do me but Justice in acknowledging that I preferred his Happiness to my own, and I know he has too much Honour to fail in that

L 3

Respect;

Respect ; and tho' in my solitary Cell I may draw a more glaring Picture of my Conquest of a violent Passion, than is consistent with the Rules of my self-denied State, yet as the Ground Work is traced by the Pencil of Truth, a little in the Shading and Colours may be allowed to Fancy, particularly where there's no Danger of deceiving others by a false and flattering Representation ; for you easily conceive that this Picture is only visible (if I may be allowed the Expression) to my own Imagination, and that I only set it up there as a Check upon the Murmurings of a Heart, which cannot easily submit to the Punishment to which it is condemned.

As I am now, added she with a Smile, got into one of my talkative Fits, you must give me leave to add a few more of my Reflections, tho' I am not without Fears of their passing in your Apprehension for Chimeras and Absurdities.

In some of my visionary Moments I have supposed myself dignified with the Title of Marchioness, and conspicuously seated in the midst of an Assembly, where my Person underwent

derwent a severe Examination from the Ladies who thought my Elevation the highest Affront that could be put upon them. One cries, She's tolerably pretty, but the poor Thing is quite out of her Element. Another whispers, but so loud that I could distinctly hear her, Is this little Creature to be one Day Duchess of *Noailles*? Tho' she's a Merchant's Daughter, says a third, she'll soon learn Quality-Airs. Such Treatment I might reasonably enough expect, and the only Revenge I could propose must be levelled against my own Folly, for driving me out of the Sphere in which I ought to have moved: Whereas by rejecting the Happiness of being united to the Marquis, I gain a glorious Conquest of an extravagant Passion, give him a signal Proof of a real and solid Esteem, and force even those Ladies, when they hear my Story, to own that I have a Soul capable of high and noble Sentiments, though placed by Fortune in a low Rank. Such Thoughts as these, my dear Miss, continued she, have roused me from the Lethargy of Love, and given me a View of the Precipice into which my fond foolish Heart was ready to plunge me; for, in short, where there's such a Disproportion as between the *Marquis de*

No-

Noailles and me, 'tis next to a Miracle if the Union and Harmony so necessary to make the Married State happy would long subsist; and if that were the unhappy Case, Should I not be a thousand times more wretched than by being for ever deprived of the Man I love? In saying this she stopt, and gave me a Look as if she desired to know my Opinion. I have listened, said I, with great Patience and Pleasure to a Discourse, which favours more of the Philosopher than of a Lady under the Influence of Love; but as I am tied down from combating your Resolution, I shall not transgress the Rules prescribed me, only give me leave in general to say, that, in all Ages and in all Countries, Instances might be given of Marriages more disproportioned than I imagine yours with your Lover would be, and that I cannot but think your Delicacy renders you cruel both to him and yourself. Were I the lovely *Teresa* I should think nothing under a crown'd Head too good for me; and in the Rule of Proportion what you bestow upon him is of infinite more Value than what you receive from him; for what are Titles but vain Ornaments only fit to captivate the unthinking Part of the World? What are Riches but Rubbish
which

which blind Fortune often bestows upon the most Worthless? Are not these, however, the only Equivalent which he can offer for the real and substantial Happiness he enjoys in the Possession of a lovely virtuous Woman, without which he acknowledges himself that he must be miserable? As for the Snow-Balls of some envious Females, who cannot bear the Mortification of having their Beauty eclipsed by superior Charms, every body of the least Penetration will find out the Motive of their Invectives, and the World, unjust as it is, if a Woman's Behaviour be otherwise regular and complaisant, will not charge her with the Fault of an obscure Birth, but on the contrary, will think that the Accomplishments of her Body and Mind sufficiently atone, for what none but Fools or malicious Women will impute to her as a Crime; so that upon the whole I must conclude, that you suggest to yourself a great many Difficulties which will never happen, and if you will promise me not to be offended, I will ——— and here I stopt 'till I had a Nod of Approbation ——— I will, I say, add that such Scruples, such Delicacies, are inconsistent with the Violence of a Passion to which you own your Heart to be subjected, and in my
Opi-

Opinion, you must either have something of a natural Aversion to Matrimony, or a very great Diffidence of your Lover's Constancy after Marriage, that frightens you from entering into that State. You are an excellent Casuist, said she, and 'tis no easy Matter to defend one's self against so powerful an Antagonist; but when you have read the melancholy Story of my Life, you will, I fancy, alter your Opinion. I will now go and do a little Business, and return thereafter with the Manuscript; and when you have perused it, my dear Miss, said she, with a deep Sigh, if you are not of my Sentiments, I will abandon them and adopt your's; with that she retired, and was scarce gone a Minute when I had a Message from the Prioress, who desired to speak with me in her own Apartment, I immediately obeyed. I found her with an old Nun who was her Favourite. Well, Miss, said the Prioress, upon my appearing, How do you do, and how do you like your Convent? As to my Health, Madam, answered I, I thank God it is perfectly good; and as to my Habitation I have had so short a Trial of it, that I can as yet say very little about it; only this, that hitherto I have met with very civil Usage, and if it continues,

tinues, I shall have no Reason to be displeased with my Confinement. I hope, my Dear, said she, that you'll be so far from having a Dislike to the solitary Life we lead, that Heaven will at last inspire you with the salutary Thoughts of renouncing this vain World, and becoming one of us ; I know your doing so would give the good Man your Father an unspeakable Satisfaction ; and as to my own Part, you may easily believe how joyful I am when I see a Girl, in the Bloom of Youth and Beauty, renouncing all sensual Pleasures and Enjoyments, and wholly devoting herself to the Service of Heaven, which I hope and pray may be your Case. Your Prayers, Madam, answered I, may do a great Deal, and I shall be overjoy'd to have the Benefit of them, as your Sanctity is exemplary ; and, if I am rightly informed, extends to the utmost Limits that human Nature is capable of ; consequently your Intercession at the Throne of Grace will, no Doubt, be favourably received, and I shall feel the blessed Effects of it in my Conversion, and Disposition to a religious Life, which as yet I must confess I am deficient in. Very well, my dear Child, said she ; Don't you think, Sister *Martha*, addressing herself to the other Nun,

Nun, that the Work of Regeneration is already begun in this poor Child's Soul, and that we shall have the Comfort of not only seeing the delusive Vapours, with which her poor Brain was affected when she came here, intirely dissipated, but likewise of being persuaded, from the Desire she expresses of being in a State of Grace, that Heaven has singled her out as a chosen Vessel, and that she will add to the Number of the Saints which this Convent has furnished to the Heavenly *Jerusalem* above? I shall not be over-hasty, said Sister *Martha*, in judging of her Disposition to a religious Life; but I think it will be no Rashness in me to conclude, that there's neither in her Behaviour nor Words the least Appearance of a disordered Brain, and I wish the Abbé who brought her here has not imposed upon us; for my Part, continued she, from what I observe myself, and from what Sister *Teresa* has told me, I have but too much Cause to suspect him; and were it not a Liberty to which I have no Title, I would ask the Favour of this young Lady to relate her Story, which would probably set us right in an Affair about which I have great Doubts. This Nun appeared to be a Woman of so good Sense, and withal had something so dis-

discreet in her Behaviour, and such a Sweetness in her Countenance, that tho' I had resolved to let none in the Convent but Sister *Teresa* know any thing of my Amours, yet I could not for my Life stand out against the Solicitations of this deserving Woman, and I immediately told her, that tho' there was little in the Adventures of my Life worth her Notice, but several things which must put me to the Blush, yet I found it absolutely out of my Power to deny her Request ; so without further Ceremony I recounted, in as brief a Manner as possible, my whole Story ; and when it was ended, Sister *Martha* embracing me, I now see plainly, said she, that Revenge made your Chaplain introduce you here as a delirious Person, and I am sorry that our Credulity has made us do you so much Injustice ; but I don't doubt but our reverend Mother Prioress as well as all the Members of this Community, when they are informed of the Imposition, will endeavour to render your Confinement as easy as possible to you. Whatever this Lady said was a Law to the Prioress, and I thought it no small Point gained to have her on my Side. The Prioress accordingly made me a great many Excuses for the Error she had laid under, and pro-

mis'd to treat me in a very different Manner from what she had intended, adding that she would write to my Father if I thought proper. I thanked her in the most submissive Manner possible, but told her that knowing his Temper, I believed it would be the best Way to give him Time to cool. Besides, Madam, said I, as your Company and the rest of the Ladies in this Convent is extremely agreeable and edifying, it would grieve me to be so soon deprived of it, particularly as I am now, I hope in your Opinions, restored to the Use of my Reason, of which our Chaplain had thought fit to deprive me. They both smiled, and the Prioress said, that she really thought his Revenge bore no Proportion to the Offence, and then dismissed me, with an Assurance of her Favour and Protection. I returned to my Chamber where I found my dear *Teresa* waiting for me. I flew into her Arms, and embracing her with Transport, my dearest Friend, said I, I'm now cured of my Madness, and will not you congratulate me upon that happy Event? By the Surprise which was visible in her Looks, she seemed to be apprehensive that I was far from being what I imagined, and that really and truly I was something more than
whim-

whimsical; but I hastened to tell her my Adventure, which set all to rights again. She pulled out of her Pocket the long look'd-for Manuscript, and, in delivering it into my Hands, said, My Friendship to you must be very strong, and my Confidence in your Discretion very great, when I trust you with a Looking-Glass, in which you'll see many dismal Objects that must give you Horror, and some moving Scenes which will draw Tears from your Eyes; but I hope, my dear Friend, in running over my Weaknesses, you'll be persuaded that, notwithstanding some Condescensions which Gratitude to a generous Benefactor forced me to comply with, my Intentions were always pure and innocent, and that my Heart, seduced as it was, never harboured any Thought prejudicial to the strictest Virtue and Honour; and this being premised, I will leave you to entertain yourself with my unhappy Story; but if you expect to meet with any thing but a plain unaffected Narrative of Facts without any Flights of Fancy, or Elegance of Stile, you will be greatly disappointed: For tho' I perhaps could have embellished it a little, had I writ it with a Design to make it publick, yet as the Design was only that it might serve me as

an useful Memorandum upon some Occasions, I was at no great Pains about the Dress, provided nothing material was omitted. Upon saying this she retired, and she was no sooner gone than I threw my Eyes upon the Manuscript which began thus, if I rightly remember, not having transcribed it.



THE



THE
ADVENTURES

AND

AMOURS

OF THE

Marquis *de NOAILLES*,

AND

HENRIETTA de TENCIN.

IF what I write should by some Accident
or other, either before or after my Death,
fall into a Printer's Hands, and be thought
worthy by him to be communicated to the
Public, for the Variety of Events with which
it abounds, he will, no Doubt, think it his
Interest not only to put the Story in a better
Dress, but also to throw in several Incidents of
his

his own, to render the Book the more entertaining, and make of the whole a miscellaneous Jumble of Truth and Fable, to hit the Variety of Tastes, and thereby promote the Sale, which is all he wants. I own that a Tradesman, or a Manufacturer of a Piece of Work, is in the right to polish it in the newest *Goust*, that he may have a ready Sale for it ; and as he that deals in the Manufacture of Books, either makes a sudden Fortune, or is hurried into sudden Ruin, he has very good Reason to take a very particular Care of the Stuff they are made of ; but I cannot, however, imagine that Truth has Occasion for a florid Stile to recommend it ; and I wish my Story may never appear in the World, if it cannot be introduced to Advantage without being stript of its simple Dress, and adorned with fictitious Incidents.

My Grandfather having acquired a pretty Fortune in Trade, and being not a little smitten with the epidemical Distemper of *Frenchmen*, could not think himself happy till he purchased an Employment, by which he and his Posterity should be raised from the mortifying *Plebeian Rank*, and ingrafted, if I may
so

so say, in the Tree of Nobles. With this View he purchased the Title of Treasurer of France, at the Expence of twenty Thousand Crowns; and as he had been useful to the famous Mr. Colbert, Comptroller General of the Finances, in several Things relating to Commerce, that Minister proposed to him the Consulship at Naples, which he accepted, and went there with his Family, where he remained till he died; and was succeeded in his Post by my Father his only Son, who married a Neapolitan Lady of a very good Family, and a Woman of fine Accomplishments, who, tho' her Heart was otherwise engaged, gave her Hand to my Father, by the Command of a rigorous Father; and tho', as this was the Case, she could not be supposed to love her Husband, yet she behaved so prudently, and had such an absolute Command of her Temper, that he never had any Occasion to suspect her Affection to him. 'Tis true, his Behaviour was such to her, that she could not but respect him, and I believe, what by his Complaisance an Attachment, more like that of a Lover than a Husband, joined to the Cement which the Procreation of Children, must make between Husband and Wife, she at last

sur-

surmounted her first Inclination, and my Father reigned in her Heart without a Rival. I had a Brother a Year younger than myself, and a little Sister five Years younger, which was the last my Mother ever had. At the Age of twelve I lost my dear Brother; the Small Pox carried him off, but spared me, tho' I had them just after him. My Mother being wholly wrapt up in her Son, who was indeed a Miracle for his Age, contracted such a Melancholy that it threw her into a Decay, in which she languished about a Year, and then died. O Heavens! ——— When I think of that dismal Day, how it chills my Blood! Had it been the Pleasure of Providence to have spared her and to have substituted me in her Place, what Misfortunes would my poor Father have avoided, and from what terrible Persecutions and Miseries should I have been delivered! But every Man and Woman must act their Part on the Stage of Life, as it is laid down in the Books of Fate, which a learned Man of my Acquaintance told me was very different from the immediate Act of Providence, tho' Fate itself could not be settled but by the eternal Decree of an omnipotent and supreme Being, who as he is omniscient must foresee all
fu-

future Events, yet his Prescience does not deprive human Creatures of free Agency. But these are Intricacies too deep for me to dive into, and as little shall I pretend to dip into the System of Fatalists, tho' I have such a Notion of it from the frequent Conversations of the said Gentleman with another Person, in my Presence, that I think it repugnant to the principal Attributes of the supreme Being. For three Months after my Mother's Death my Father seemed to have quite forgot the Concerns of Life, by the Disposition of his Chamber hung with black Cloth and darkened: In this Sort of Tomb did he sit from Morn to Night, gazing on a gold Box placed on the Table before him, in which was my Mother's Heart; and I often accompanied him in this melancholy Place, where, by the Help of Wax Tapers he would now and then make me read the Adventures of a Gentleman at *Rome*, who, upon the Loss of a Wife, whom he passionately loved, had shut himself up in such a Place as this for a whole Year, never having once seen the Sun or Day-Light during that Time. My Father was resolved to imitate his Example, and often told me with Tears in his Eyes, that as it would be cruel to condemn me to the Sort
of

of Life which he intended to lead, he was resolved, after settling his Affairs, to send me to *France*, to the Care of an Aunt of his who was married at *Paris* to one of the Farmers general, a Man extremely rich. How happy had it been for me that this Project had been executed ; but Fate, or something else, had otherwise decreed, and I was, it seems, born under the Influence of some very unhappy Planet ; or rather Providence, for my Good, and to wean my Heart from an inordinate Love of the Pleasures of Life, kindly threw into my Way Difficulties and Trials enough to disgust me with the World, and to make me look on sublunary Enjoyments as mere transitory Shadows, that are gone in the Twinkling of an Eye, and even in the fleeting Moments of their Possession are so elogg'd, that no rational Creature can be fond of them : This at least I can say from Experience that in the whole Course of my Life, I never knew what it was to pass one single Day in what may be called uninterrupted Joy ; something from within or from without still stood in the Gap ; unsatisfied Desires, disappointed Hopes, Frowns of Parents, disagreeable News, bodily Distempers, not to mention the momentary Changes

Changes of one's own Temper, and a Thousand other Inconsistencies in our Frame and Disposition, to which we are every Moment liable and obnoxious. Some one or other of these Contingencies of human Nature (if I may so term them) are our constant Attendants, and put a Stop to our Career in the Pursuit of Pleasures, or throw such a Damp upon their Enjoyment, that they soon lose their Relish; and in this Disposition of Things, I have often admired the infinite Wisdom and Goodness of Providence, in preventing, by this Means, our making the Enjoyments of this World the principal Objects of our Desires. But to return to my Father: Tho' I believe his Grief for the Loss of my Mother was real, and that, perhaps, in the Height of it, he resolved to dispose of me in the Manner he told me, yet Things took a very different Turn; his Grief by Degrees abated, he removed from his doleful Apartment, and began to receive the Visits of his Friends and Acquaintances, whose Company and Conversation soon restored him to a perfect Composure of Mind; so that about the End of the fourth Month after his Wife's Death, he seemed to have quite forgot her, and frequented the Assemblies and other publick Places

Places as if no such Thing had happened. Our Governor, who had a particular Regard for my Father, was a Nobleman of great Accomplishments, and might be said to have no other Failing, but that of taking up too much of his Time in Gallantry, he did my Father the Honour of a Visit, and having told him that he understood his Daughter was pretty, he desired to see me, upon which I was called, and made my Appearance directly. His Excellency made me a great many Speeches, and told my Father that he insisted upon his bringing me to the Assemblies which were kept thrice a Week at his House, and his Desire you may believe was easily complied with; for our Governor, as he's a Vice-Roy, is very absolute in *Naples*, and will be obey'd; besides, it was my Father's Interest as Consul for the *French* Nation to keep well with him. Tho' I was at that Time an absolute Stranger to every thing of Love and Gallantry, yet I could discover by certain Glances which the Governor threw at me, when my Father happened to turn his Head about, that he saw something extraordinary about me which took up his Thoughts, and I had a Sort of Foresight that I should be unhappy upon his Account; the Event but too well

well confirmed my Conjecture. My Father did not fail to carry me next Assembly Day along with him to the Governor's, where I was very much caressed, particularly by the Countess of *Maricalla*, a Widow Lady; a fine Woman indeed, but coquettish to such a Degree that her Reputation had greatly suffered; but your Court Ladies laugh at the confined Ways of thinking of us inferior Females, and think themselves so far above Scandal that they are the first who make a Jest of the Reports that are spread about their Intrigues. — As this Lady kept close by me, the Governor, under Pretence of entertaining her, found Means to tell me in very plain Language that I had made a Conquest of his Heart, and that he would be the unhappiest Wretch upon Earth if I did not pity him. What surprised me most was, that he made his Declaration before this Lady, who made me many congratulatory Compliments on my Conquest, and told me that tho' she had some Pretensions to the Governor's Heart, yet out of Regard to his Happiness, and in Consideration of my superior Merit, she would yield it to me, provided I would grant her my Friendship in return. I was very much at a Loss what Answer to make

to Declarations so odd as they both appeared to me. I told the Governor that I should have been, perhaps, greatly mortified, had he not treated me with the same Gallantry as other Ladies upon their first Appearance at Court, but that I would take Care not to imagine, as some others had done, that he meant any thing farther by it than to say a civil Thing ; and as for you, Madam, turning to the Widow, if you think my Friendship of any Value, you may purchase it at a much cheaper Rate, than by such a Sacrifice as you propose ; and, in my Opinion, his Excellency would be much to blame to think of conquering any Heart but her's, who loves him so well as to sacrifice her own Happiness to procure his ; for my Part, Madam, tho' I have no Experience in such Matters, and have no Inclination to be better informed, yet according to my present Notion of Things, I believe I should scarce be so generous as to give up my Interest, in a Man whom I loved, to a Rival, and I think the Woman who is capable of such a generous Action, deserves the Whole of his Heart. I had no sooner pronounced the last Words than a Gentleman, who had, it seems, some Business with the Governor, came up to him, which,

which, to my great Satisfaction, put a Stop to our Conversation. The Governor rose up and in leaving us told me, smiling, We will take another Opportunity to discuss the Argument we were upon; and I hope, Madam, said he to the Countess, you will continue to be on my Side; but whether it was that she began to repent of her Generosity, or did not chuse to renew the Conversation before another Lady who had joined us, when the Governor was gone, I know not, but she said not a Word, and glad I was, for her Procedure had greatly shocked me. About the Hour of the Assembly's breaking up, I observed the Governor whisper my Father, who a little after came and told me that we were to stay Supper, which threw me, without knowing for what Reason, into a shivering Sort of a Fit, but it furnished me with a Pretence of going home, which my Father consented to, after telling the Governor that I found myself a little indisposed. I here saw a new Instance of a growing Passion, for his Concern was so visible, that I wondered my Father did not take Notice of it. He brushed up to me with an Air of a Man under some violent Agitation, and told me very softly, I doubt not,

Miss, but you can just now read your Conquest not only in my Looks, but at the same Time see what a sudden Change your Indisposition has wrought upon the whole Frame of my Body, and you may believe I shall be far from being easy till I know that you are perfectly recovered ; I had flattered myself with the Pleasure of your Company at Supper, but I find now that I must be deprived of that Satisfaction ; my Body will be here, but my Heart attends you ; and as it adores you with inexpressible Raptures, I hope you'll use it kindly, and sometimes think of its wretched Master. I made no Answer to this rapturous Speech, but after curtesying to the Company left the Assembly Room, and was handed to my Coach by the Governor's Equery. I was extremely pleased to find myself at home, and exempted from the Persecution of our Governor, who, tho' a Widower, I was pretty sure had no honourable Intentions towards me, and I was fully resolved to go no more to his Assemblies, and even to tell my Father my Reasons, if he insisted on my going.

NOTHING could equal my Surprise next Morning, when Word was brought me that
the

the Countess was come to pay me a Visit; I immediately flew to my Father's Apartment to acquaint him, and he ordered me to go and entertain her 'till he was dressed, which he did that Day with more Ceremony than usual. The Moment the Countess saw me, she ran with open Arms to embrace me, and told me that nothing could give her more Pleasure than to find me perfectly recovered, which she could judge I was, by the Freshness of my Complexion, and a Sparkling in my Eyes, infallible Signs of Health: O how our poor Governor, added she, would be ravished, were he here just now! and how those two brilliant Stars would dart Flames of Love into his Heart! Indeed, Miss, continued she, he loves you so passionately, that were the *Indies* in his Power, he would give all the Riches in them, for the Possession of your dear Person; and tho', to speak ingenuously, I am acting against the Interest of my own Heart, in endeavouring to represent the Violence of his Passion for you, and using all the Arguments I can think of to move your Pity towards him, yet his Case is so melancholy, so desperate, that I cannot hinder myself from pleading with you in his Behalf. I need not trouble you with a De-

N 3

scription

scription of his Person, you have seen him, and must know that few Men are more handsome; and the Elevation of his Rank as Vice-Roy of the Kingdom of *Naples*, would make the proudest Lady in this Country ambitious of being the Object of his Wishes; and for my Part, answered I with Warmth, interrupting her, as I am pretty certain that the Vice-Roy of *Naples* can have no honourable Designs upon the *French* Consul's Daughter, I look upon all his Declarations of Love as Insults; and were he King of the *Two Sicilies* and of the whole Earth besides, he would in vain attempt to seduce my Virtue: As I look upon you, Madam, continued I, to be a Woman of Reputation, I cannot imagine how you came to take his Cause in Hand, without knowing whether his Designs are honourable or not. She fell a laughing with all her Force, and at last said with a Sneer, and in an ironical Tone, to be sure the Vice-Roy, knowing Miss *Tencin's* high Notions of Virtue, must only talk to her in the matrimonial Strain; and does my pretty little Miss, added she, really fancy that she's to be a Vice-Roy's Lady? No, Madam, cried I in a very surly Tone, I have no Notion, nor, indeed, any Am-

Ambition to be elevated to that high Rank ; but I have Spirit enough to despise any Man or Woman upon Earth, who imagines I can be treated with on any other Terms ; and you'll oblige me, Madam, if, as I imagine you came here at his Desire to sound me, you'll advise him not to give himself or me any farther Trouble, for he may be assured it will be to no Purpose. My Father's coming in prevented her Answer, which, no Doubt, would have been bitter enough, if one might judge from the Anger which appeared in her Looks ; and I believe my own were not very composed. But the Countess, who was one of those artful Women, who can transform themselves, in a Moment, into what Shape they think proper to assume, told my Father that her Impatience to know the State of my Health had got the better of her Laziness, and made her get out of Bed this Morning sooner than usual ; I made a very profound affected Bow, without saying one Word, but my Father spoke for himself and me too, and complimented her in such a high Strain, that I began to think so many fine Speeches flowed from some other Source than the Obligation he thought himself under upon my Account, and his Looks greatly confirmed my

my Suspicion; but as I was not as yet certain, I resolved directly to try an Experiment, by which I fancied I should make a Discovery. I suppose, Madam, said I to the Countess, you did not drink Chocolate this Morning before you came abroad, and therefore, with your and my Father's Permission, I will go and order some for Breakfast; with that I got up, scampered to the Door, without giving her or him Time to reply. I judged that if my Father was dissatisfied, he would, after she was gone, reprimand me for my Forwardness; and if otherwise, I should conclude that he was pleas'd with my giving him a *Tete a Tete* with the Lady: In short, I flattered myself that I should, by their Behaviour after I returned, discover something. Besides, I was glad of any Excuse of getting from a Woman for whose Company and Person I began to have an intire Aversion. Upon my Return they both appeared to be very well pleased, particularly my Father, who thanked me for thinking of Breakfast, which perhaps might not have come into his Head. The Countess was full of Spirits, and said a great many pretty Things; for it must be allowed she was a Woman of great Wit, and had her Morals corresponded with her other

En-

Endowments, perhaps few or none in the Kingdom would have exceeded her ; but as she was defective in what is most amiable in our Sex, all her other Accomplishments did only render her more conspicuously odious ; for I look upon a beautiful vicious Woman as a strange Compound of Contraries, and an Assemblage as preposterous, as a Negro's Face with white Spots in it. What a Pity is it to see a Master-piece of Nature rendered frightful by a corrupted Mind ! and how far from being nauseous are even outward Deformities, when the Soul is endowed with shining Virtues ! An *Epictetus* could inspire a fine Lady with tender Sentiments, and the Beauties of his Mind so wholly possessed her Thoughts, that, deformed as he was, his Embraces gave her no Disgust ; but if once a Man discovers in a Woman vicious Inclinations, let her be as beautiful as *Venus*, even in the highest Raptures of his Passion, he must despise her, and when the Violence of the Flame begins to lose its Force, and Reason, by Degrees, to reassume its Functions, her Beauty fades apace in his Imagination, those very Charms with which he was so much captivated, tho' perhaps not in the least diminished, lose their Influence, her Behaviour and

Conduct

Conduct displease, he is surpris'd at his Infatuation, and at last hates her heartily ; which was the Case of my unhappy Father, and the Source of my Misfortunes. Before the Countess went from our House, she told my Father that the Governor was to take a Family Supper with her that Evening ; and as I know, added she, how acceptable your Company is to him, you must do me the Favour to come and act the Landlord : You know, continued she smiling, that to help the Widow and the Orphan is a Duty incumbent upon all good Men ; but as one Woman is not a Match for two Cavaliers, I hope you'll bring Miss along with you, that she may keep me in Countenance. My Father I could easily observe, was extremely pleas'd with the Invitation, and told her, very gallantly, that any Post about her was more agreeable to him than to be a Prime Minister of State ; that he thankfully accepted the Employment she honoured him with, and should endeavour to acquit himself to her Satisfaction : So off went my Lady conducted by her adopted Landlord, who thought himself in the High Road of being soon a real Landlord in her Ladyship's House. When he had handed her into her Coach, he returned with Joy in his

his Looks, I suppose, at the Thoughts of his new Employment. *Henrietta*, said he, this charming Lady seems to be fond of you, I would therefore earnestly recommend to you, as a Thing which will be to your own Advantage as well as mine, to make it your chief Endeavours to cultivate her Friendship. Sir, said I, my constant Study shall be to obey your Orders, in every Respect, to the utmost of my Power, and if, after what I have to communicate to you about the Countess, you think it proper I should make my Court to her, I certainly will, tho' I foresee many Inconveniences attending a particular Intimacy; I then recounted Word for Word my Conversation with the Governor and my Lady, and was more surpris'd than can be express'd to find my Father highly pleas'd with the Discovery. My dear Child, said he, do not let such Things alarm thee. The Governor's Passions are strong, and if he finds he cannot gratify his Desires upon his own Terms, you will perhaps get so deep into his Heart, that, rather than be miserable, he will comply with your own Conditions, and I shall reap an Advantage, which, for Reasons, I don't think proper to let you know as yet. But, answered I hastily,
the

the Countess makes a Jest of my pretending to honourable Conditions. Never mind that, said he, but still keep up to them, and leave the rest to my Management; but be sure to behave discreetly to the Governor, and above all Things not to disoblige the Countess. It is my Duty to obey you, Sir, said I, but I own that I don't love such political acting, and I dread the Consequences of this Affair, being almost certain that the Event will not answer your Expectations. Never fear, Simpleton, cried he, but do as I desire you. I asked his Liberty to go and see my little Sister who was boarded at a Convent in the Neighbourhood. You may go, said he, but come home to Dinner, because I expect some Company.

THE Nun who had the Charge of the Boarders in this Convent had been an intimate Acquaintance of my Mother's, and she was as a Mother to my Sister and me; and tho' I had promised every thing that my Father desired, yet I resolved to consult with this good Lady, and to govern myself by her Advice rather than his, because I had too much Reason to think that the Charms of this bewitching Countess had made a strong Impression upon his Heart; and

and tho' I did not imagine that, in order to make himself happy, he would consent or be accessary to my Ruin ; yet as I had heard and read of some Men who have sacrificed their own Honour as well as that of their Children to gratify their Passions, I was resolved to advise with my Friend in every Step I took. Upon my appearing at the Grate, my dear Child, said she, my Impatience to wish you Joy was so strong, that had you not come I was going to send a Messenger to acquaint you that I wanted to speak with you. I am glad, Madam, said I, that I have prevented your taking that Trouble, and must beg that you'll inform me upon what Account you intended to wish me Joy. Why, Child, said she, upon a Conquest which must, no Doubt, highly flatter your Vanity, and make all our *Neapolitan* Ladies look upon you with envious Eyes ; but pray, my Dear, answer me one Thing ; How did the Countess of *Maricalta* behave ? Instead of giving you a direct Answer to this Question, Madam, give me leave to tell you that my Design of coming here this Morning was to give you a particular Account of my Adventure with the Governor and that Lady, and to beg the Favour of your Advice,

by which I am resolved to regulate my Conduct. And you may be assured, my dear Child, said she, that I will always give you the best I can, so let me hear your Story, which I did ; not omitting the least Circumstance. She listened to what I said with great Attention, and when I had concluded, she lifted up her Hands and Eyes to Heaven and pronounced these Words : *May kind Providence be a Shield to her Innocence, and preserve her from the base and wicked Designs of a Man mad with the Rage of Lust, and a base treacherous Woman a scandal to her Sex ! May her poor deluded Father be restored to the Use of his Reason, and see, before it is too late, the Precipice on which he stands ! And may his Daughter's Virtue baffle all the hellish Plots of those who seek her Ruin !* During this Ejaculation, I trembled from Head to Foot, turned as pale as Death, and I believe I should have actually fainted away, had not my Friend made me take a little Drop of a Cordial Water, of which there was a Bottle by Accident at Hand. When I was a little recovered, she told me that my Story had greatly alarmed her, but that she hoped, whatever Danger I was in, Heaven would not abandon me ; but that you may see, my Dear, continued she, that
that

that my Fears are not without Foundation, I must let you know, in a few Words, the Story of this Countess, that you may be the more upon your Guard. I need say nothing of her Person, you see what it is, and must allow that very few Women can enter the Lists with her for external Accomplishments; and did she join to such a lovely Body a virtuous Mind, she might, without Exaggeration, be reckoned one of the finest Women of the Age; but alas! she has effaced the Lustre of her Charms by the Irregularity of her Conduct, which is perhaps not so much owing to Constitution, as to the bad Example set before her by a Mother who was infamous for her Intrigues. It was always my Opinion, that the supreme Being had not formed any of his Creatures with a vicious Byass and Propensity, and I could never bear the pompous Harangues of some of our Preachers upon the natural Turpitude; and indeed too many of our Divines seem to imagine, that the properest Way of exalting the Deity is in degrading Mankind, and abusing his Offspring; and this they do by representing us coming into the World with Guilt, and naturally incapable of performing any Action virtuous in itself, or acceptable to Heaven. I think

there cannot be a greater Reflection on the Author of Nature, on his Wisdom, Goodness, and Purity, than such an Opinion ; and I am persuaded that our Propensities, which are not acquired, are on the Side of Virtue. But to return to the Countess, whose Education was so wretchedly bad, that it is no Wonder she indulges herself in the same Career of Pleasures which her Mother followed so openly, that the Daughter, no Doubt, firmly believed she committed no Crime in imitating her Example, who so far from instilling Principles of Modesty and Virtue into her Heart, admitted her, as I have been credibly informed, into some of her Parties of Pleasure, and often strenuously maintained, in her Presence, that the Prohibition of Gallantry only regarded the lower Class of Mortals, and was no ways binding on Persons of Quality.

I have no Patience nor Inclination to enter into a Detail of her Mother's disorderly Life after her Husband's Death, nor shall I mention some inconsiderate Steps of her Daughter when scarce thirteen ; I shall only tell you that she never played the Coquette bare facedly and without Reserve, 'till her Husband brought
her

her to this City, and she fell acquainted with our Governor ; who being a Man very susceptible of Love, soon made his Addresses to her, and did not (if Fame speaks Truth) long languish : For six or seven Years she has been the favourite *Sultana* ; but it seems now, my dear Child, that her Reign draws to a Close, and that he wants to substitute you in her Place, which Heaven forbid. I am not at all afraid, Madam, said I, that the Governor with all the Arts and Stratagems he can employ, shall ever be able to seduce my Virtue and Innocence, but I dread the Power of the Countess's Charms with my Father, who is, if I am not greatly mistaken, much taken with them already ; and who knows, but, finding the Governor's Passion almost wore out, she may be inclined to listen to my Father's Addresses upon honourable Terms, and if she ever consents to give him her Hand, she will, no Doubt, make a Merit of what she will call a Sacrifice, purely to oblige the Governor, and that she may be of more Service to him in his Designs upon me. As a Mother-in-Law, with the Art that she is Mistress of, and all the Opportunities that she could wish for, I must lay my Account to be vigorously attacked, and

if she should after all find her Attempts unsuccessful, into what a Rage must such a Disappointment through her, and what dire Effects of her Revenge ought not I to dread? The Prospect before me is gloomy, the Precipice, at least in my Imagination, not very remote, and I advance a pace towards it; but I hope my Virtue, assisted by your Prayers and Advice, will be a Guard to my Steps, and preserve me from falling into the dreadful Gulph of Shame and Misery. As my Father ordered me, added I, to be at home at Dinner, I must not stay any longer here, but to-morrow about this Hour I will return and give you a faithful Account of what passes this Evening at the Countess's, where I suppose my Father will insist upon my going along with him; and where I will endeavour to watch their Conduct so narrowly, that you yourself will be able to form a Judgment of their Designs. Go, dear Child, said she, and may the Almighty protect you from all wicked Attempts of those who are pursuing your Ruin. It will, I confess, added she, be a great Misfortune to you should that base Woman come into your Family, but I hope after what your Father knows already of her Character, and what I will take Care to
let

let him know, before Matters are near a Conclusion, he will not be so mad as to marry one of so bad Fame, and so unlike his former Wife. However, should his Passion blind him so as to make him trample under Foot the Obstacles which his Friends will throw in the Way, and make him not only overlook her Debaucheries, but likewise stifle the opposing Motions of his Honour ; and should he (which is the worst that can be supposed) be so far deluded by this Woman as even to join with the Governor and her in their hellish Plots against your Virtue ; nor they, nor all the infernal Powers will be able to prevail, while you place your Trust and Confidence in God, and earnestly implore his Protection : Let this be your constant Practice the Moment your Eyes are open in the Morning, and before they are shut at Night, and through the Course of the Day, make every now and then this Ejaculation : *I am surrounded on every Side by Enemies, who seek my Ruin ; but may Heaven protect me from all the base Attempts, and confound their Devices.*

Tho' Providence may sometimes seem to abandon the Virtuous for a Tryal of their Faith,

Faith, yet sooner or later an invifible Power comes to our Relief, when we leaft expect it ; and this may ftill be depended upon, that if our Hearts are fincerely attached to Religion and Virtue, we will be enabled to go thro' our Tryals with a perfect Refignation to the Will of God, who in his appointed Time will give us a complete Victory over our Enemies, and let us fee, in their Difappointments and Difgrace, the Folly and Madnefs of deviating from the Paths of Righteoufnefs ; and indeed, my dear Child, if we are fteady in the Practice of Virtue and of our religious Duties, we will enjoy a certain Serenity of Mind, which will bear us up under the greateft Afflictions, even tho' we have but the diftant Hopes of their ceafing when we leave this World : How fhort the Term of our Sufferings, even in this Cafe, compared to the lafting happy Profpert of eternal Blifs ! and who would not chufe to undergo Hardfhips of the worft Sort for the fhort Time we are to remain in this World, without murmuring, for fuch a Recompence as our bountiful Creator has provided for thofe who love and ferve him to the utmoft of their Power ; for tho' in our human frail State we cannot attain to the Purity of the angelical Nature,

ture, yet as Heaven knows under what Disadvantages we labour, from the constant Warfare of the Flesh and the Spirit, he has graciously assured us that our grossest Mistakes, upon a sincere Sorrow and Repentance, will not be laid to our Charge, but will be blotted out of the Book of his Remembrance, and we, in and through the Merits of our blessed Saviour's expiatory Sacrifice, approved of in the general Judgment of the World as good and faithful Servants: O what Heart would not glow at the Thoughts of such a ravishing delightful Scene! What Man or Woman, who could only now and then fix their Thoughts on a future State eternally happy without the least Mixture of Pain, or eternally miserable without the least Hopes of Relief, would, to enjoy the fleeting Pleasures of this Life, (which, from the Checks of Conscience and other Inconveniences attending their Enjoyment, are not only unsatisfactory in the very Moment of their Fruition, but leave behind them a Disgust, the Consequence of disappointed Expectations) risk their eternal Happiness, or murmur at the Dispensations of Providence, shocking, perhaps, to Flesh and Blood, but intended by the wise Author of Nature, our gracious and bountiful Father in Heaven, as Chastisements necessary
to

to quicken them to their Duty, and to rouse them from that Lethargy of Sloth and Luke-warmness in Religion, into which they might otherwise be apt to fall: 'This would naturally lead me to examine into the seeming unequal Distribution of what we commonly call the good Things of Life, and whether every Man and Woman's State is not wisely and favourably laid out by Providence for their Advantage; but I have already, I am afraid, too far transgressed upon your Time, and perhaps upon your Patience too, without reflecting that a young Girl may be very good and virtuous, tho' she be not wholly wrapped up in such Contemplations as our solitary Lives render familiar to us, and employ the spare Time we have from our immediate Acts of Worship. O, Madam, cried I, nothing can give me more Pleasure than to listen to your heavenly Discourse; and could I flatter myself that by imitating your Example, in retiring from the World, I could but arrive at a State of Perfection many Degrees lower than your's, no Consideration on Earth should retain me in it, where in all probability I shall be exposed to many severe Tryals; and in this, Child, said she, interrupting me, you have a glorious Opportunity

portunity of arriving at a higher Degree of Virtue than we within these Grates can pretend to ; for I am far from thinking that our Virtue has the same Lustre or real Merit with that of a Person who has surmounted a thousand Temptations, from which our being debarred all Commerce with the World exempts us ; and I will say farther, that tho' I have made it my Choice to seclude myself from the Society of Men, yet I am far from thinking that my Merit is equal to that of a Woman, who, notwithstanding her Connexion with the World, and her being continually exposed to the Allurements of it, bravely stands her Ground, and goes through all the turbulent Scenes of Life with unfulled Virtue : Such States as ours are calculated for Persons unqualified to move in so high a Sphere, and who perhaps, without the Constraints we lay ourselves under, would yield to Temptations which our Virtue could not surmount ; and if we have any Merit at all (I only speak for myself) it consists in our voluntary Choice of such a State of Life, as puts it out of our Power to be grossly vicious : Therefore, my dear Child, take Care not to indulge visionary Perfections, which a heated Imagination may represent as
no

no where existing but in Cloisters ; they are intollerable Prisons to some, downright Hells upon Earth to others, and but Sanctuaries to a very few. We may be called little Republics not otherwise useful to the Common-wealth than by our being prostrate from Morning to Night at the Altar, and putting up our Prayers for a Blessing on the lawful Endeavours of our Fellow-Creatures who are busied in the Affairs of Life ; and did we discharge this Duty with Exactness and Fervour, we might have some Claim to their Acknowledgments and Friendship ; but alas ! we are nothing less than what we would have the World believe us to be ; and there's scarce a Nunry in the whole Kingdom, where the Members are not divided into little Parties and Factions, animated with mutual Hatred and Animosity, and constantly plotting against one another ; but what is still more surprising, you will find among us Ambition, Vanity, Covetousness, Envy, Malice, Gallantry, and all the other fashionable Crimes that abound in the World ; and the principal Reason or Cause of such Disorders I take to be owing to this, that not one of twenty have a real Vocation to a religious Life. How many of our Nuns are sacrificed for the Interests of
Fa-

Families, not rich enough to procure them suitable Matches, and who during the whole Course of their Lives curse the Day on which they pronounced the fatal *Formula* ! How many others have been gained over by the Carresses and Cajoleries of Nuns, who being wretched themselves are glad to make others share in their Misery ! and these no sooner discover the Imposition, which after their Reception speedily happens, but they look upon them as their mortal Enemies, and the cruel Authors of the Misery into which they have irrecoverably plunged themselves. What then can be expected, but Hatred, Malice, and constant Jarring, between Women who think themselves ill used when the others upbraid them with Treachery and Seduction ? The Consequence whereof is, that the whole Community is divided into Factions, and every Individual takes the Side that is most agreeable to her own Way of thinking. But I am not considering that I detain you much longer than I intended. Adieu, my dear Child, I will at some other Occasion renew the Conversation upon this Subject ; in the mean Time be assured of my Friendship

and Prayers: Go, and, if you can conveniently, let me see you to-morrow; upon which she retired, not giving me Time to make the least Acknowledgement of her Favours. I returned home penetrated with the surprizing Description my Friend had given me of the religious Communities. How strangely have I been deceived, thought I within myself, and how little are we to rely upon outward Appearances! If Vice and Immoralities have even crept into those holy Retreats, where can one fly to be secure? A Moment after I was got home, the Guests whom my Father had invited to Dinner arrived, three in Number, all of them *Frenchmen*, and I suppose Traders. My Father was full of Spirits, no Doubt, with the pleasing Thoughts of passing an agreeable Evening with the Countess, at least such was my Conjecture, and this joined to the Discourse of my dear Friend at the Convent made me extremely thoughtful; on which my Father, as he knew me to be naturally chearful, rallied me. My Daughter, said he to the Gentlemen, never goes to visit a little Sister of her's boarded in a Convent, but the Nuns preach her into melancholy Fits of Devotion, but she little knows that the greatest Part of their affected Austerity
is

is nothing but mere Grimace, and all their canting Conversation upon the ravishing Pleasures they enjoy in a religious retired Life, are only Traps to catch poor unthinking Girls, whom they want to render as unhappy as themselves. It was pretty odd that his Sentiments and my Friend's should so well agree; and I cannot say but this Concurrence of Testimonies put the Thing quite out of doubt with me. I answered, however, that *Madame d'Allon* (the Name of my Friend) was the only religious Lady I visited in the Convent, and that I believed he would not suspect her for preaching up any Doctrine she did not practise herself. Ay, ay, cried he, she's a very good Nun, and is, I believe, sincere in what she professes; but she wants to raise People up to a Degree of Perfection which is quite without the Reach of human Nature; and according to her System the Men must turn Monks and Fryars, and the Women Nuns, to obtain Happiness hereafter. If that was her System formerly, replied I, she has now relinquished it; for this very Morning she positively asserted, that she looked upon her own Merit as far inferior to that of a Woman, who could preserve her Virtue unsullied, amidst the Temptations and Al-

lurements of a degenerate World ; and concluded that Confinement and Grates were only calculated for Persons unqualified to move in so high a Sphere. I think, said one of the Gentlemen, who was pretty far advanced in Years, the Lady's new System is as rational as the former was wild ; for to confine Salvation to a Parcel of indolent lazy Monks and Fryars would be a terrible Baulk to honest Industry, which is enjoined so strongly to the whole Race of Men, that he who does not provide for his Family is deemed worse than an Infidel ; but such a monstrous Notion needs no Arguments to confute it : I shall therefore drop her old System, and only add upon the new one, that I perfectly agree with the Lady's Opinion, for this short Reason ; that there can be no great Merit in abstaining from a Crime which is not in our Power to commit. And this we all know may be the Case, in many Respects, with Women confined within the Grates of a Cloyster ; but if, by the Austerities of a holy Life, they can attain to an intire Conquest of all vicious Inclinations and Desires, there's, no Doubt, a shining Merit in that Victory. But how can it be supposed, said another of the Gentlemen, that a Lady
bred

bred up in a Convent from her very Infancy, in the constant Practice of all the Christian Duties, should have any irregular Desires unless she brings them with her into the World, and consequently must have a natural Impulse that leads her on to Vice? which I am so far from allowing, that I think we all of us have naturally a moral Sense implanted in the Mind, directly calculated to spur us on to Virtue, otherwise we must drop the comfortable, and, in my Judgment, the just Opinion that we receive nothing from the Hands of the supreme Being which is not, like himself, perfectly good. Nothing that he might not communicate, consistent with his infinite Benevolence. Original Sin may here, 'tis true, be urged as a Check upon my Hypothesis, and Children's being given (a Thing consistent with daily Experience) to Lying, Pride, and every Vice they are capable of committing, seems to confirm the Depravity of our Natures. But as to the Perverseness of Children, it may easily be accounted for. Do we not daily see *fond Mothers* acting, without Design, as if they had a real Intention to erase out of their Minds the pure Impressions of Nature? Are not Equivocations commended in young Children

whilst they are for their Parents Advantage? Are they not taught to be proud of their Clothes before they can put them on? Is a Child a little out of order, perhaps from an over-loaded Stomach, Is not this the *fond Mother's* Language, What will my Dear eat? What shall I get for thee? Here she endeavours to enervate the Mind by Luxury. But there are many more Methods of instilling Vice into the flexible Minds of Children, which I dare say have not escaped the Observation of any here present, so that it would be quite needless to repeat them; and I shall only add, that 'tis owing to Education, the continual Temptation of present and sensible Objects, and the powerful Force of Example, that there is such a great Degree of Vice in the World. These suspend the generous and kindly Influences of Compassion, harden the tender Heart, and make us deaf and blind to Pity. Here the Gentleman ended his Discourse, with which I was very well pleased, I mean as to his Sentiments, which received a persuasive Force from the graceful Manner of Delivery, and I could with Pleasure have listened to him longer upon the same Subject. My Father, after a Moment's Silence, in which I had Time to make
my

my little Reflection, told him smiling, I have no Inclination, Sir, to enter the Lists with you upon the natural Propensities ; I shall only beg leave to say, that you must be very little acquainted with the Manners and Customs of our Nunneries, if you imagine their Inhabitants as innocent in Theory, with respect to certain Vices, as they perhaps are in Practice. There are Nuns, and many of them too, who, tho' confined within the narrow Precinct of a Convent, are as much acquainted with the Ways of the World, as if they frequented the most publick Places, and acted a conspicuous Part on the Stage of Life ; and I dare say there's not a secret Intrigue or Piece of Scandal that happens, from one Year's End to the other, in this City, but what is directly carried to the Convent, where my Daughter was this Morning, by some Prude or other, who make it the chief Business of their Lives to pry into the Amours and Intrigues of the Town, that they may afterwards, in conjunction with the holy veiled Matrons, concert proper Measures of rendering Publick what otherwise would, perhaps, never be known ; and were these hypocritical Devotees to confine their Defamations to Persons who were really guilty, one might
be

be apt, out of an abundant Charity, to attribute what they do to indiscreet Zeal, or to their Abhorrence of Vice, and to terrify others from such Practices by the dread of being exposed, which with many would be a stronger Preservative than religious Motives; but these publick Nufances, for I can term them no otherwise, when the Town affords them no real Adventures, are fruitful in Invention, and are sure to have some scandalous Report whispered about upon some Person or other, who has the Misfortune to disoblige either them or their associated Nuns; and rather than not carry on their usual defamatory Trade without Interruption, they will even traduce Persons whom they never saw, and with whom they have not the least Acquaintance. What Opinion then can one entertain of Nuns who correspond with such Monsters? How is it possible to imagine that in Places where Women of such Characters have the Government, young Girls can be educated in the pious innocent Manner you imagine? No, no, Sir, our young Ladies, who remain in Convents from their Childhood till they arrive at the Years of Discretion, are far from being Novices in the Theory

Theory of Gallantry, when they make their Appearances in the World, and not a few of them learn even the practical Part there, in which they are greatly indulged by the considerate Nuns, that they may not tell Tales when they are got from under their Direction. As this is your Notion of those religious Houses, said the Gentleman who spoke before, I am surpris'd, Sir, that you would trust the Education of your Daughter with such People. In the first Place, answer'd he, it is by far the least expensive Way of having young Girls taught what they must absolutely know; and, in the next Place, it happens that my Daughter is under the Inspection of a Woman who, is of a very different Character from the Generality of them, and will, I believe, as far as she is able, prevent her being corrupted by bad Example. Here ended the Conversation upon the Subject of Nuns and Convents; and soon after our Strangers taking their Leave, retired, and my Father went out after they were gone, acquainting me that about seven he would return, and carry me along with him to the Countess's House; and be sure, added he as he was going out at the Door, to dress yourself to the best Advantage, without giving me Time to ask

ask the Reason of such Orders. What can be his Plot, said I to myself, in ordering me to dress to Advantage? Does he imagine that the Governor's Passion will rise to such a Height that he will become his Son-in-Law? Though his Vanity would be flattered by such an Alliance, yet my Heart disclaims the Match, and tells me plainly that I shall be unhappy if ever I am united to him. But I have no Occasion to anticipate Evils which are not likely to happen, tho' the Governor is perhaps amorous, yet he is ambitious, and rather than not strengthen his Interest by a suitable Alliance, he will conquer his Passion, if he finds it cannot be gratified, but in a Way prejudicial to his ambitious Views. And should he harbour nothing in his Breast but base Designs of gaining me over as a Mistress (which I could really wish were the Case) I shall soon let him see the Folly and Madness of any such Project, and my Father could not with any Confidence blame me, if I carried my Resentment to such a Height as never to see his Face more; and indeed I feel a secret Pleasure within me upon the Thoughts of Things coming to this Extremity. With such Soliloquies as these, did I pass away a great Part of the Afternoon, and
not

not at my Toilet, as my Father had ordered me, who was not a little out of Humour, upon his Return, to find me so different from what he expected. I thought, said he, that you would have had more Regard to my Orders, for your dressing in the best Manner you could, than what I now find ; pray do me the Favour to tell me the Reason of your disobeying my Commands? I am clean, Sir, answered I, and I thought that was all you meant. The Excuse, cried he, in an angry Tone, is worse than the Offence, for it joins to Disobedience Diffimulation, which is a greater Crime than the other. Well, Sir, said I with the Tears in my Eyes, since I must tell you what I should have willingly kept within my own Breast, for fear of giving you Offence, please to know that I cannot with any Satisfaction accompany you to that Lady's House, for Reasons which will be but too soon made known to you by others than me, and which, I dare say, you will find to be reasonable Obstacles against any young Woman's frequenting her Company, who has the least Regard to her Reputation. Explain yourself, said he with Fury in his Looks ; I insist upon knowing these Obstacles immediately, that I may be able to judge
whe-

whether they are reasonable or not. I trembled from Head to Foot, and could not pronounce one single Word, such a Terror I was under. No Subterfuges, no Evasions, added he in a thundering Voice, but the downright Truth with all its Circumstances, or you may expect to be treated with all the rigorous Punishments that a just Indignation can invent. I threw myself at his Feet, where a Flood of Tears gushed from my Eyes; I embraced his Knees, but he pushed me from him with such Violence that, falling backwards, my Head struck the Floor with so much Force that Sparks of Fire, I thought, flew from my Eyes; and tho' I was neither killed nor wounded, the Stroke had so confounded me, that, for some Minutes, I did not altogether recover my Senses. At last, however, I came to myself, and finding that this cruel Treatment, or, perhaps, the Stroke, which pained me not a little, had dried up my Tears, and put a Stop to my Sobbs, I could now speak distinctly, and I therefore without farther Delay addressed him in the following Manner.

I am extremely sorry, Sir, that my Imprudence has been the Occasion of putting you
into

into such a Passion, and I am willing to make any Attonement, in my Power, for the Offence I have been, without Design, guilty of, provided my Submissions can make you easy, and restore me to your Favour, which no Consideration on Earth, except the Loss of my Honour, could tempt me to forfeit; and I know you are too good, too just, and have too much Grandeur of Soul to desire such a Sacrifice of me. I am therefore ready, if you still require it, to inform you of what I have been told concerning the Lady, by which you'll see that my Unwillingness to be in her Company, or to have any Correspondence with her, is not the Effect of a groundless Antipathy, but proceeds from the just Apprehension of having my Reputation blasted. Proceed, said he, I will hear what you have to say. — I recounted, Word for Word, the whole Conversation I had that Morning with *Madame d'Allon*, as her Discourse had made too strong an Impression upon my Mind to forget it. I could observe my Father's Countenance sometimes all in a Flame, which made me tremble, and ready more than once to stop; however, on this Occasion, I surmounted my natural Timidity, and finished my Narration; but

good God ! what Reception met it with ! and how strangely was I disappointed in my Expectations ! He wildly stared, stamped and walked about the Room, expressing the Swell of Rage in every Look, in every Action ; at last he stood, and broke out into these very odd Expressions. *By Heavens ! nothing but Calumny, damn'd hellish Calumny ! Go, Wretch, to thy Chamber and let that be thy Prison, 'till I think proper to release thee : I will fall upon a proper Way of punishing that calumniating Monster, but take Care not to let her know by Letter or otherwise what has happened, for if thou do'st, I swear by all that's good thy Life shall pay for it, and I myself will be the Executioner.* I made no Reply, but left the Room, and went streight to my Chamber, where I had abundance of Time, without the least Interruption, to reflect on what had happened. I considered my Father as a Man passionately in love with that Woman, and consequently shocked at what I had said ; I pitied his Blindness, and heartily forgave the ill Usage I had met with, rather condemning myself for Imprudence than him for Cruelty. 'Till about eight at Night no Mortal came near me, and then only an old Footman with a Glass of Water and about

two Ounces of Bread, which he told me his Master had ordered him to bring me at that Hour. I asked him if my Father was returned? No, Madam, said he, the Coach is ordered to attend him at the Countess *de Maricalla's* at Midnight: Very well, answered I, you may retire. I suppose, said I to myself, after the Servant was gone, my Father resolves to punish my Body with this spare Diet, but I am infinitely better pleased with this Bit of Bread and Glass of Water, than to have been a Partaker of his elegant Supper in the Place where he is; so that instead of mortifying me, as he imagines, I own myself singularly obliged to him. Many a poor Wretch has no better Suppers for Months together, and many better People, in all Respects, than I can pretend to, are perhaps deprived of even this slender Refreshment, which if not so relishing as rich *Ragoûts* and delicate *Viandes*, breeds none of those noxious Humours which are the Consequence of high Feeding; besides, is there not a secret Pleasure results from our being persecuted for the Cause of Virtue? Am I not infinitely more happy here alone with the poor Man's Repast, than at the splendid Table of a lewd Woman, base enough to serve

as a Tool in new Amours, since her Charms can no longer retain her Lover in her Chains?
“ O Virtue ! thou noblest Source of Fortitude,
“ thou sweetest Support of the human Mind,
“ how unspeakable is thy Value, and how
“ much more than wretched is the Mind that
“ wants thy Aids.” I continued in the rhapsodical Strain for a considerable Time, and my Indignation was wrought up to so high a Pitch of something very like Enthusiasm, that I thought my simple Bread and Water the most delicious Fare I had ever in my Life tasted. Before I went to Bed, where I enjoy’d a comfortable Night’s Rest, I threw myself upon my Knees, and prayed with all the Fervour of my Soul, that my dear Father might be preserved from the Snares of that bewitching Woman, and that he might be made sensible of the dangerous Precipice on which he stood. Tho’ I have no Faith in Dreams, and always thought it a very idle Thing in some of my Sex to be taken with them, yet I had one this Night so extraordinary that I cannot help thinking that they are secret Premonitions of what is to happen, tho’ for the most Part they relate to what employ our Thoughts in the Day-time, and ought to be disregarded.
There

There is something however so singular in this Dream or Vision, that I cannot help giving it a Place here.

METHOUGHT my Mother came to my Bed side, and drawing aside the Curtains, took me gently by the Hand, and asked me softly, My dear Child, are you sleeping? No, Madam, answered I not at all terrified; What are your Commands? Your Father, said she, has resolved to let you have nothing but Bread and Water till after his Marriage with this unhappy Woman, whom he now passionately loves, but whom he will in the Sequel mortally hate, when he comes to know the former and present Disorders of her Life; but alas! said she sighing, it will be then too late, for she will, before that Discovery is made, have completed the Work of his Ruin, as she did that of her former Husband. She owes very large Sums of Money, and her Creditors keep off out of Respect, or, rather, from a Dread of the Governor's Power; but as his Days will be but few in the Land of the Living, no sooner will his Breath be out, than your poor deluded Father must go to Goal, or save himself by Flight. I pity him, but still more thee, my

Q 3

dear

dear Child, who deserves a better Fate; but when all Resources seem to be lost, a generous young Nobleman, animated with a sincere and honourable Inclination, will preserve thee from being exposed to Want and Misery, and would think himself the happiest Man in the World to be for ever united to the Object of his Wishes: Whether that will happen or not Heaven only knows; but this I can make thee sure of, that tho' thy Life will be attended with many Misfortunes and Crosses, if thou placest thy sole Trust in God, and never deviate from the Paths of Honour and Virtue, thou wilt be enabled to go chearfully through all the Rubs and shocking Scenes of it. Here methought she gave my Hand a gentle kindly Squeeze, and vanished from my Sight.

WHETHER this was a Dream, or a Vision, I shall not pretend to determine, tho' to this Hour I am apt to believe the latter, from every Thing's happening precisely according to the Prediction; however, such an Impression it had made upon my Mind, that Sleep was quite banished from my Eyes. My first Thoughts were towards Heaven. ——— O my God! cried I, pity our Distress; thou art a Friend
in-

deed in Time of Need, and will protect all those who put their Confidence in thy Goodness and Power. To thee I can appeal as a Witness of the Purity of my Mind, the Integrity of my Heart, and the Sincerity of my Love and Duty to my Father. I must, I will confide in thy Goodness. — In some such Thoughts as these I passed the remaining Part of the Night, and got up pretty early next Morning with an Intention to write a Letter to *Madame d'Allon*, which I resolved, to have ready in my Pocket in case any Opportunity offered of sending it; but upon my examining my Scrutore, I found I had got no Paper, and I knew it was needless to ask for any.

ABOUT eight o'Clock the old Footman knocked at my Door, and when I opened it, he presented a Glass of Water with a little Crust of Bread, telling me that my Father had ordered him to bring me that for Breakfast. Give my Duty to my Father, said I, and tell him that I receive what he is pleased to send me with due Acknowledgment; and taking the Server on which the Glass and Bread were placed, I shut the Door. I must confess that

that this second Meal of Bread and Water did not go down so well as my last Night's Supper, because by this time I found my Stomach could have received something more solid ; and my Dream holding so far true, made me conclude, that if I was to have no other Subsistence till my Father was married, he must go speedily about it, or I must be reduced to Skin and Bone, and suffer not a little by the Distresses of Hunger. For if my Allowance continued to be the same, it could not possibly, I thought, keep in Life any long time. However I resolved to submit patiently to the Will of Heaven, which in its own due time would relieve me from my Distress.

It is surprizing, and almost incredible, that I should have subsisted above two Months upon about four Ounces of Bread a Day and a Pint of Water, without any Fit of Sickness or other bodily Distemper, but now and then some Pains in my Stomach and Swimmings in my Head ; and sure I am my Preservation is owing to a miraculous providential Assistance, which I took care to acknowledge many times every Day upon my Knees, and in my momentary Ejaculations. The Servant, who
con-

constantly brought my Bread and Water, was a surly crabbed old Fellow, and no doubt imagined that my Father had good reason for treating me in the manner he did. This I could observe by his Behaviour, and was the Reason I never asked him any Questions but about my Father's Health, which I enquired after every Day.

ON the sixty-second Day (for it may be easily believed I counted them very exactly) I could hear an unusual Noise of People hurrying up and down Stairs; and when my Jailor came with my Bread and Water, I ventured to ask him the meaning of it; and he, in a surly Tone, told me that there was a great Company to dine with my Father. Very well, said I, and so shut myself up, not without shedding Tears, I own, to think that I should be starving, when perhaps the meanest Domestick in the House had more than was necessary: but I soon checked my rising Murmurings, by fixing my Thoughts on things far above the contemptible Pleasures of Life; and considering, that if I should die under this sort of Martyrdom, it would be the happiest thing that could befall me.

ABOUT

ABOUT five o'clock, as I was lying upon my Bed, to which my Weakness, not being able either to walk or sit up long, often confined me, I heard the Noise and Voices of Persons coming up stairs, who at last knocked at my Door, which I reached with some Difficulty, and opened, not without Apprehensions that my Father was now to put the finishing Stroke to his Cruelties: and tho' one would think such a Life as mine could not give the least Anxiety for its Preservation, yet Nature abhors a Dissolution; and let our Condition be ever so wretched, the Thoughts of Death are shocking; at least this was my Case. Nothing could equal my Surprise, when the first Person I perceived was the Countess, and close behind her my Father. I could scarcely believe my Eyes. Good God! cried she, holding up her Hands, what do I see? Is it a Ghost, or a human Creature? Then turning to my Father; Alas! Sir, said she to him, you have carried your Resentment to too great a height: Had she injured me a thousand times more than she did, I never would have consented to her being reduced to such a frightful Skeleton as she now appears; go, said she to my Father,

ther,

ther, or I will myself, and order some Chicken-broth to be got in all haste ; in the mean time send up a soft Biscuit with a Bottle of *Frontinac*, that she may take a Spoonful of Wine with a Bit of Bread, to keep her alive till she gets some Broth. At that instant, observing me ready, what with Weakness and Surprise, to fall on the Floor, she took me under the Arm, and conducted me to my Bed. My Father did not open his Mouth, but by his Countenance I could observe that his Mind was not easy ; but whether the Condition he saw me in moved his Compassion, or that his Anger still subsisted, I cannot tell, but the Moment he saw me in Bed, he went down Stairs ; and in a very little time a Servant came up with the Wine and Bread, of which the Countess directly made me take a Mouthful and half a Glass of Wine ; after which she told me, that she would go herself and hasten my Broth, exhorting me to take Courage, and to believe that she had no hand in the Hardships I had undergone. I returned her Civilities in the best manner I could!

THE Drop of Wine and Bit of Biscuit had relished so well, or rather my Hunger was so
urgent,

urgent, that when the Countess was gone out, I devoured the Remainder of the Bread, and drank a full Glass of Wine, which made me quite drunk ; so that when a Chamber-maid brought up the Broth, she found me singing and talking wildly, which made her conclude I was mad ; and indeed she was not much mistaken ; for the Fumes of the Wine had got into my Brain, and made me quite light-headed : however at her Desire I supped some Spoonfuls of Broth, which by Degrees dissipated the Vapours, and lulled me a-sleep, out of which I did not awake till eight o'clock, when I found the same Maid sitting by the Bed-side. Pray, tell me, said I to the Girl, if I have seen the Countess *de Maricasta* and my Father this Afternoon in my Chamber, and if I have had Wine, Biscuits, and Broth ? for I am not certain whether it be really so, or that I only dreamed of such things ; and tell me too, if I am not still dreaming, when I fancy that I see a Person sitting by my Bed-side, to whom I imagine myself talking ? The Girl could not help smiling at my Extravagance ; however she assured me, that I had really eat and drank, and seen the Persons whom I mentioned ; and and as for myself, continued she, taking one
of

of my Hand, this Touch will convince you that I am no imaginary Creature, but real Flesh and Blood, and a Woman such as your self, tho' not reduced so low by Abstinence. If this be the Case, answered I, what brought the Countess here? You surprise me, Madam, said she: Do you not know, that this Lady is now your Mother-in-law, and that she is come to live with her Husband at this House?

I immediately suspected that this Maid, whom I had never seen before, belonged to her, and therefore I took care not to let her know my Aversion to this Marriage, or to say any thing disobliging. It would probably have been an Advantage to me, said I, if I may judge by the Change of my Condition, since the Countess came to the House, that she had been here two Months ago, since her Compassion would, no doubt, have soften'd my Father's Indignation, and have prevailed with him not to have used me in so cruel a manner as he has done; give my Duty to my Lady, and tell her that I am very sensible of her Favours, which I shall acknowledge upon all Occasions. Before I obey your Commands, Madam, said she, let me beg of you to eat a Wing

R

of

of this Chicken, which I have kept hot while you was sleeping. She had no great Occasion to use many Arguments with one whom Hunger had pressed so much as it did me. I consented with Pleasure, and soon got the better of a Wing and a Leg, which was all she would give me at that time. I then got up till my Bed was made, after which she assisted me to undress, and saw me in bed before she left the Room, placing some Water and Wine within my reach, in case I should happen to want Drink, which was no bad Precaution; for I found my Blood in a strange Ferment, and often wanted to cool my Mouth and Tongue.

NEXT Morning about eight the same Maid brought a large Dish of Chocolate with some Jelly, and told me that her Lady would come and see me as soon as she was up. What can be the meaning of all this civil Usage, thought I? Is it out of Pity? or is it with a view to give my Father an early Instance of her Good-Nature and Disposition to forgive Injuries? or is it not rather to ingratiate herself in my Favour, that she may the more effectually bring about my Ruin? Charity indeed obliges me to be very cautious before I
give

give way to such unjust Suspicions ; but then her Character, does it not authorise them ? Supposing the worst ; the same kind Providence that has made her the Instrument of delivering me from the Misery of Hunger will, I hope, frustrate any bad Designs she may have against my Virtue ; and till I plainly perceive that such are her Intentions, I will entertain a grateful Acknowledgment of her Generosity, after what she knows I said against her.

I neither saw her nor my Father for four or five Days ; because the House was always crouded from Morning till Night, and nothing but a perpetual Round of Feasting, Gaming, and Dancing. However, my Meals were brought me regularly, and every thing good in its kind ; so that I began to recover apace, and flatter'd myself, that if things went on at this rate I should be happier than I imagined : but the Calm did not last long ; new Storms arose, and I have for many Years been tossed to and fro, like a Ship in a boisterous Sea without a Pilot to direct her Course.

THE Chamber-maid (whose Name was *Mirella*) not only brought my Victuals, but attended me by her Mistress's particular Orders ; she was a Girl of very honest but poor Parents, and had Sentiments much above Persons of her Rank ; she was an excellent Needle-woman, and particularly excelled in joining of Lace. It may be thought trifling to be so particular upon this Girl's Talents, but the Reason will appear in the Sequel of my Story, and at the same Time such an Instance of Affection and Friendship as is rarely to be met with. You may remember, Madam, said she, I told you some Days since that my Lady was to pay you a Visit, and you are perhaps surpris'd not to have seen her since ; but as I find an invincible Prompter within me to render you all the Service in my power, I am resolv'd not only to inform you of every thing that happens, in general, in the Family, but likewise, in particular, of my Mistress's Sentiments with regard to you ; which are far from being such as you perhaps imagine them ; and I think there's so much Cruelty, so much Wickedness in her Designs, that I should reckon myself as guilty as herself, were I
to

to conceal them from you. As for her Intrigue with the Governor, I understand by her that you are not ignorant of it, and that what you told your Father (who, poor Gentleman, thinks her unjustly accused) is the Reason of his having used you with so much Barbarity ; but be not deceived by her apparent Civilities, for there's nothing but Revenge in her Breast, and all her affected Kindness is with no other View, but to ruin you more effectually. The Governor is still passionately in love with you, and is resolved, I find, to stick at nothing to satisfy his vicious Desires ; and if Providence had not furnished me with the means of putting you upon your Guard, in all human Probability you must have been undone by a Stratagem which could not be hatch'd but in Hell. You must know, continued she, that my Lady is so much addicted to Gaming, and so unlucky, that, in order to pay some gaming Debts, she has been forced to borrow Money on her Jointure, of which she does not, nor ever will, enjoy a Farthing ; and she owes still large Sums to several People, which will very soon fall heavy upon your Father, who has very imprudently obliged himself, in his Contract of Marriage, as she tells me, to pay

her Debts, believing them to be but trifling ; but which, if he is not rich, will greatly distress him. She has had a bad Run of Luck for two or three Days past, which has put her very much out of Humour, and is the Reason of her not seeing you as she promised. No longer than last Night, after having lost what Gold she had in her Purse, I was called for into the Gaming-Room, where she gave the Key of a Scrutore in her Closet, and, whispering in my Ear, told me that I would find, in a little Drawer, marked Number 1, an Order from the Governor on *Remini* the Banker for two hundred Ducats, which she ordered me to go and receive, and when I returned to send her Word by the Page, and to attend her in her own Apartment. When I was in her Closet, a Curiosity, which I never had before, and which I must confess was blameable, forced me to look into some other Drawers ; and to my great Surprise in the very first I happened to search I found a Letter from the Governor directed to her, of which I immediately took a Copy, with a Design to shew it you, and thereby put you on your Guard, upon which she gave me a Paper that contained what follows :

My

My dear tutelary Angel,

I Have found out a travelling Doctor, who, among other curious Secrets, has a Powder, by which the Quantity of a Pinch of Snuff put into a Glass of Wine, will make a Girl so fond of a Man who has a little of the same Powder about him, that if he does not attack her, she will him; by the Means and Power of this charming Powder I shall make a Conquest of that foolish virtuous Girl T——. The Way I propose to carry this Scheme into Execution, is, by sending your Husband to transact some Business which I have with the Bishop of Caprea; this will keep him absent above a Week, and during his Absence you must retire to your Country-House, where I will come and give Mademoiselle, whom you are to take along with you, her Dose. I don't doubt but Enjoyment will cure me of my present Madness, and that I shall return to your Arms with the same Raptures as formerly; I hope that Motive will induce you to assist me in carrying on my Design.

I have had the Experiment tried upon two of my Servants, and it answered surprisingly, so
that

that I have no Doubt of its Success in my own Case ; and every Moment will be an Age 'till I am revenged of that little haughty Girl, who has made me perfidious to the most charming Woman in the World ; and to whom I long to restore my Heart. Adieu ; I hope you shall soon have me intirely yours without a Rival.

WHEN I had perused this monstrous Paper, I heartily embraced this honest Girl, and told her that I thought myself a thousand Times more obliged to her than if she had preserved my Life, but, my dear *Mirella*, continued I, if the Countess should propose my going to her Country-House with her, how must I behave ? I have already thought of that Difficulty, said she, and am persuaded that if you should refuse to go, or even express the least Unwillingness to accompany her, she would conclude, that you still suspected her, and would perhaps endeavour to execute here, what is intended to be done in the Country ; for which Reason I would advise you to seem fond of the Proposal, and as I shall know the Day on which she intends to go out of Town, you may pretend to be suddenly taken ill about the Time of her setting out, and you'll immediately

ately see that she'll be disconcerted, and alter her Thoughts of going to the Country ; which will convince you of the Reality of their villainous Designs. This may do, said I, with respect to the Country, But how shall I guard against their Attempts here ? I shall imagine that every Drop of Wine or Water I drink is poisoned with that diabolical Powder, and I shall not even eat any thing but with Terror. Tho' I will watch all their Motions, answered she, so narrowly, that I believe it will not be in their power to put any thing either into your Drinkables or Eatables, without my Knowledge, yet as it is possible they may, somehow or other, deceive my Vigilance, there's but one Way of being absolutely safe ; but it is, I own, a desperate Remedy, and perhaps what you could not undergo. What is it, cried I with Vivacity ? Provided it is neither sinful nor shameful, let it be ever so difficult, I will undertake it, rather than be made infamous. Why then, said she, the only Way is not only to leave this House, but also to retire from *Naples*, till Providence brings about some favourable Change. I have an Aunt, added she, a very pious discreet Widow, who lives about twenty Miles from Town, who will,

will, I am sure, receive you with open Arms ; but as she is not in a Situation to maintain a Person of your Rank, nor even me, I will make so good Use of my Needle, that I hope you shall not want, at least, the Necessaries of Life ; and I will settle such a Correspondence before I go, that we shall be informed of every thing that passes in your Father's House. My dear *Mirella*, said I, with Tears of Joy in my Eyes, Providence has, no doubt, put it in your Heart to be the Means of my Preservation. I agree with Pleasure to your Proposal, and every Moment will be an Age to me till I am with that good Aunt of your's, where I shall reckon myself in Safety ; but as for our Subsistence, at least for some Years, you need be under no Concern. I am in Possession already of Jewels to the Value of three hundred Pistoles ; we will convert them into Money ; and lay that out in some Sort of Trade, of which the Profits may go far to support us in our frugal Way of living ; and tho' I am not so dexterous at the Needle as you, yet I can already do a little, and will endeavour to improve ; so that with the Assistance of Heaven, which we may hope for in our honest Endeavours, I am not afraid but we shall live happily enough ;

enough; nay, even better than I can propose to do with such a Step-mother as I have got, tho' there were no Governor to persecute me; for I have but too much Ground to believe that my poor unhappy Father will soon be, if not already, ruined; and in this Case, I must give my Mother's Jewels (tho' they are, by Contract of Marriage, my Property the Moment I am fifteen Years old) either to my Father or his Creditors; and, indeed, could they relieve him from his Difficulties, or that he were reduced to Want, he should not be a Minute without them, tho' I had no visible Way in the World to support myself; but I know that when he finds how Things are, he will take care to save what Money he has in foreign Countries; so that I think no body, in Justice, can blame me to secure the little Trifle that belongs to me, at least till I see how Matters go with him; and if I find that he has really Occasion for them, they shall be at his Service. Tho' I am but a poor Girl, said she, and of mean Extraction, yet such dutiful and noble Sentiments give me a sensible Pleasure, and attach me so zealously to your Service, that if ever I abandon you, while you think proper to allow me to remain about you, may

may Heaven punish me ! And may it also punish me, said I, if ever I forget the Service that you have already rendered me, or have any thing but what I will share with you.

THESE last Words were scarce out of my Mouth when the Countess entered ; upon which *Mirella* directly left the Room. My dear Miss, said she with an Air of Affability and Sweetness, which no Woman could affect better than herself, I am ashamed to have been so long without seeing you ; but we have had such Crowds of People from all Corners of the Town coming to visit us, that, 'till this moment, I have not had a spare Minute, tho' I wanted much to have a little private Chat with you, by which means I hope we shall come to understand one another better than we have hitherto done.

I am not ignorant, continued she, of your Aversion to your Father's Marriage with me, nor of the Reasons that induced you to wish it might not take place. I am resolved to lay my Heart open to you ; and hope that a sincere Confession of my Failings will, in some measure, excuse them ; if not with the World, at least
with

with Heaven, that knows how far my Heart is touched with a real Sorrow and Repentance. If Madam d'Allon, who informed you of my Story, has done me Justice, she must have acquainted you in what manner I was educated by a Mother, who, I blush to own it, laughed at Virtue and Modesty, as idle Dreams of the weak and superstitious part of Mankind; and rejected all Notions of Happiness as mere Chimeras, that clashed with sensual Pleasures and Enjoyments, in which alone consisted, according to her System, the only real Felicity that Human Nature is capable of possessing: for as to future Rewards and Punishments they were, in her Opinion, only necessary Absurdities, as well as many religious Ceremonies, imposed on the Ignorant for the sake of Order, and as the means to keep them better under Subjection. These were the Principles I imbibed in my younger Years; and were, no doubt, strong enough, without the Force of Example, to corrupt the Mind; but this, I mean my Mother's Behaviour and Conduct, made me look upon Persons of different Sentiments and Characters as Fools and Idiots; and by the time I was got in the thirteenth Year of my Age, I had made such a Progress in Irreligion and Co-

S

quetry,

quetry, that my Mother seemed to be highly delighted with what she called my Good-Sense and Sprightliness. At the Age of fourteen I was married to the Count *de Maricalta*, a Nobleman of an admirable Temper, and passionately fond of me; but as he was fifty Years old I looked upon him as my Plague, and did all I could, by my extravagant Gaming and other Expences, to break his Heart as well as ruin his Fortune. If I never had any serious Intrigue upon my Hands till I met with our Governor, you will easily believe that it proceeded rather from want of proper Objects than Inclination; because I have already told you, that I thought Gallantry rather an Accomplishment in a fine Lady than a Crime. But I have of late reflected on the Disorders of my Life with Amazement and Horror; and and having put on a strong Resolution to abandon not only my loose Principles, but likewise all bad Practices, I thought my Marriage with your Father would be a reasonable Pretence for my breaking off all criminal Commerce with the Governor; and that Consideration, more than any thing else, made me consent to become your Mother-in-law; in which Station I hope I shall give you no Cause
to

to think yourself unhappy ; and as a Proof of my Good-will to you, I now retract what I formerly said in favour of the Governor when he employed me, or rather when I basely undertook to assist him in his wicked Design of adding you to the number of his Mistresses. His Passion for you is not as yet extinguished ; and he even flatters himself, that I will now be in a Condition to serve him more effectually than before ; but he will find himself under a terrible Mistake, because I am resolved, underhand, to let you know all his Designs, that you may be upon your guard. And were it not that I am obliged to keep fair with him, upon my own Account as well as your Father's, neither you nor I should ever see his Face again : But when he finds your Virtue is not to be shaken, and I tell him 'tis in vain to expect any Success, I doubt not but he will desist ; for it is a Folly to imagine that his Ambition will allow you to think of him as a Wife.

I wish it never may, answered I ; for I assure you, Madam, I should not think it a Happiness to have a Man of his Temper and Character for my Husband ; and were I re-

duced to the Necessity of either consenting to be his Wife, or to be shut up in a Convent for Life, I would chuse the latter. I doubt not, added I, but the World, and perhaps your Ladyship, will look upon this Choice as foolish and imprudent; but I have no notion that the married State can be happy, without many things which would not happen were we to be united.

I cannot but think, said she, that were we to propose making you his lawful Wife, you would be an Enemy to yourself, as well as to your Family, to reject him. But as I scarce believe it will ever come to that, there is no occasion for urging Arguments upon the head; and I shall only add, my dear Daughter, before I leave you, that I hope my ingenuous Confession will remove the Hatred which you had justly conceived against me, and that my future Behaviour will entitle me to your Esteem; with that she arose up, and went towards the Door, where turning about, I had almost forgot to tell you, said she, that you are no longer a Prisoner, but may go to church, or take the Air when you please, and *Mirella* shall attend you. I made a low Curtesy, and away she went.

I was extremely well pleased, that I was exempted from answering the last Part of her Discourse; for to own her Guilt deserved Indulgence; but if what she said was nothing but the Product of a refined Hypocrisy, and a Scheme to acquire my Confidence, to tell her that she had made sufficient Attonement for the Harm she intended me, would have been imitating her Disingenuity; and, on the other hand, to say that I had some Doubts about her Sincerity, would have made her a thousand times more my Enemy than she was, and very probably reduced me again to Bread and Water, the Thoughts of which, I own, were frightful. Is it possible, thought I within myself, that a Woman can plunge herself into such a Depth of Wickedness as this? for either she must be the most abandoned Wretch upon earth, or *Mirella* has imposed upon me, which I can hardly allow myself to think, as she carries Good-nature and Innocence in her Looks; besides, what could be her Motive to shew me such a Letter, and to offer to abandon her Mistress, with a view to preserve me from her and the Governor's base Designs? Tho' I cannot believe her to be treacherous,

yet Prudence requires I should act with caution, till I know her a little better. My God ! cried I with my Eyes turned towards Heaven, I have known Enemies, who are seeking my Destruction, and perhaps secret ones too, into whose Designs I have not as yet been able to penetrate ! but I will place my Confidence in thy Goodness and Mercy, which have hitherto protected me, and will, I hope, continue to be my Defence in the midst of Dangers that surround me !

I had scarce ended this ejaculatory Prayer before my Father appeared, whose Presence was become terrible to me. He shut the Door behind him, and advancing towards the Middle of the Room he thus spoke. Your Mother-in-law, notwithstanding your ungenerous Treatment of her, could not be easy till I promised to forgive what is past, and restore you to Favour ; which I do, upon condition that you make it your study to please and obey her, as you would do the Mother that bore you.

I threw myself at his Feet, and begged with Tears in my Eyes, that he would allow me to retire from the World, where I had no
Satis-

Satisfaction, nor any Prospect of future Happiness; by this means, added I, you will get rid of me at a small Expence, and I shall have no Opportunity of offending you or my Lady.

If you think, replied he, that you have a real Vocation to a religious Life, I will not oppose your Design; but consider seriously of it beforehand; because if you go into a Convent with a design to be a Nun, I expect you will go thro' with it, and not make yourself the Subject of Ridicule or Tea-Table Talk by retracting: I will give you a Month to consider of it; and if after that you persist in your Resolution, your Request shall be complied with. In the mean time, it is your Mother's Desire and mine, that you appear and take your place at Table as usual. Get yourself dressed, and be ready to come to Dinner; where I believe there will be a pretty large Company. He said no more, but left me to go to my Toilet, from which I gladly would have been excused.

In a few Minutes after, *Mirella* came up, and told me her Lady had ordered her to attend

tend and assist me in getting myself dressed ; and, Madam, said she, smiling, as you are to have the Governor's Company at Dinner, it is expected that you will appear in top Dress. Who told you, answered I, that he is to dine here? The Page, Madam, who carried him a Billet from my Lady, after she left you, and the Governor not having Time to write, sent his Service to my Master and Mistress, and ordered the Page to tell them, that he would come and take a Share of their Soupe, about One o'Clock. O Heavens ! cried I, if this should be the fatal Day appointed to put their hellish Project in Execution, how can I guard against it ? I had the same Thoughts, replied she, and was resolved to have mentioned my Apprehension of some such Design, had it not occurred to you. It is not to be imagined, continued she, that this cursed Powder will be put into any of the Dishes that are served, because others might be caught as well as you, so that if it's to be given at all, it must be put in what you drink ; the Butler is, I know, a Creature of my Lady's, and capable of the most villainous Actions to serve her, for Reasons that are not proper for me to mention ; and, therefore, in my humble Opinion, the safest Way is, neither
to

to taste Wine nor Water while you are eating. When the Desert is served, the Bottles put upon the Table, and the Servants retired; you may then safely drink a Glass or two of Wine and Water out of the same Bottles, from which the rest of the Company fill their Glasses. This Advice carried such an Appearance of Sincerity along with it, that I was more and more confirmed in the good Opinion I had of her; and therefore resolved directly to let her know all that had passed betwixt my Mother-in-law and me, not doubting but that I should find, in her Opinion of that Conversation, a new Instance of her Honesty and Friendship; at least, I earnestly wished that it might be so; for I found my Heart very averse to harbour any suspicious Thought of her. When I had repeated every Syllable of what the Countess had said, looking fixedly on *Mirella*, would it not be an unpardonable Breach of Charity in me, said I, (more with View to sound her, than that I wanted to be advised) to suspect a Woman who has with Regret confessed her Weaknesses, and who has not only shewed me all manner of Civilities, since she came here, but likewise been the Means of my Reconciliation with my Father? Tell me your Opinion, frankly, *Mirella*, continued

tinued I; for I have such a Confidence in your good Sense and Friendship, that I will always think it my Interest to consult with you. As for Esteem and Respect; Madam, replied she, you do me Justice in believing, that I have them for you in the highest Degree; but to pretend to advise, is a Presumption which I hope I shall never be guilty of; but since you command me to declare my Opinion sincerely, I think it is my Duty to obey. I shall not take up much of your Time in the Remarks I am to make upon my Lady's Behaviour, only give me leave to say, that either I must be an Impostor, or she a Hypocrite. If the Copy of the Letter which I gave you, be an Invention of mine, I am the guilty Person, whom you ought to suspect and avoid; but if, on the other Hand, that Copy was taken from a real Original, found by me in her Scrutore, in that Case, as she made no mention of it in her Confession, I think there's room to call her Sincerity into Question; for to attribute her Silence of so material a Circumstance to Forgetfulness, would be pushing charitable Indulgence farther than, in my humble Opinion, it ought to be extended. As the Case stands at present, the Difficulty lies in this: Whether
you

you ought to trust to her or me? Time alone can resolve the Question, and clear up the doubt which you must now be under; for my part, continued she, I am satisfied that it be put upon that Issue, and that you place no farther Confidence in me, 'till you are fully convinced (which I hope will be very soon) that I have not imposed upon you; be assured, however, that during this Suspension of Confidence, which I think just and reasonable on your Part, I will omit no Opportunity of rendering you what Service lies in my power.— There was so much good Sense, such an Appearance of Truth in what she said, that I was perswaded she was incapable of Treachery. My dear *Mirella*, said I, taking her by the Hand, my Heart tells me that I ought not to think you capable of deceiving me, and you have made me take Notice of what had not occurred to me, with Respect to the Countess, who must appear to you, in a very odious Light, and I believe a true one; I shall therefore beg the Continuance of your good Offices, and you may depend upon meeting with a grateful Return. I then went to my Mother-in-law's Apartment, where I found three or four Ladies, who had been invited to Dinner.

Every

Every one made me a Compliment on my Recovery, from a severe Fit of Sicknefs, which they fuppos'd I had been afflicted with, and I did not think it proper to undeceive them. In a little Time Word came that Dinner was ferved, and the firft Perfon I faw in the Hall was the Governor magnificently drefsed, who feemed greatly furprised on feeing me fo much altered from what I was when he faw me laft. Your Daughter, faid he, aloud, addreffing his Difcourfe to my Father, in a Tone which feemed to me something rough, has been it feems worfe handled than you thought proper to let your Friends know, that you might not, I fuppofe, alarm them ; but I think you was to blame to conceal it from me, who have now in my Houfe the moft able Phyfician in *Europe*. Your Excellency's Concern for my Daughter, does both her and me Honour, reply'd my Father, but a little matter makes an Alteration in a Girl's Complexion, and what fhe has loft that way will foon be repaired. Come, faid the Governor, no Ceremony of Places, but every one, Ladies and Gentlemen as they ftand, fo that Men and Women were intermixed as the Custom is in *France* ; and it happened that the Governor
was

was just opposite to me, which I could have wished had been otherwise. There was very little said, during Dinner, but when the Desert was served and the Servants retired, the Governor addressed the Countess thus: Madam, I have a Favour to ask of you which I'm afraid to mention, because I must confess it is unkind with regard to both your Husband and you, and were you not as much my Friends as you are, tho' the Affair is of the last Consequence to me, yet I believe I should scarce attempt it, as I cannot but be persuaded that it will give you both Pain. My Lady seemed to be under some Concern, at least she affected to be so, for in reality she was under none, knowing very well what he was driving at.

I am so well persuaded, answered she, your Excellency will desire nothing of the Consul or me, but what is consistent with our Honour to grant, that for my own Part, (and my Husband will speak for himself) I can answer before hand, that it will be a Pleasure to me instead of a Pain to have it in my Power to serve you; and I, said my Father, am of the same Mind, and beg that your Excellency

will, without any farther Ceremony, let us know in what we can serve you.

WELL, said the Governor, I have an Affair of Interest to negotiate with the Bishop of *Caprea*, and as I cannot conveniently go myself at this Time, I should be obliged to you, Sir, if you would do me this Piece of Service ; and remember, Madam, turning to the Countess, that he will not be absent above a Week at most ; and do you remember, said she, laughing, that, to be revenged for robbing me of my Husband, the Moment he embarks I will go to my Country House, with Miss *Tencin* along with me, for the Recovery of her Health, and not stir from thence till his Return. What am I to expect from you, Sir, said the Governor, turning to my Father ? If your Excellency does me Justice you cannot doubt, reply'd he, but that I will at any time prefer your Interest to my own Satisfaction, of which I shall be only deprived but for a few Days ; and therefore I am ready to go when you think proper. I thank you both, said he, and shall endeavour to return the Obligation when an Opportunity offers. But, Madam, said he, addressing himself to the Countess,

ness, do you consider what dull Meetings our Assemblies (of which you are the Soul) will be, without your Presence? but after all, continued he, when I reflect of what Advantage a little of the Country Air will be to Miss *Tencin*, I cannot, in conscience, press you not to go. Is it not true, Miss, said he, looking full in my Face, that dissuading your Mother from going to the Country, would be a very bad Way of making my Court to you? I should be glad, answered I, to wait upon my Lady in the Country, if it were her own Choice to go there; but I should have but very little Pleasure in it, did she deprive herself of the Diversions of the Town for my Sake; and therefore your Excellency needs not be under the least Restraint upon my Account, or be the least apprehensive that I shall murmur at your prevailing with her not to go. His Excellency, said the Countess, smiling, will find it no easy Matter, since he deprives me of my Husband's Company, to persuade me to give him mine in his Absence, and I am resolved, whether you do me the Favour to accompany me or not, to retire from the City the Moment I see him on Board; your Health, Miss, added she, could not but receive Benefit

from a little Country Air, and that joined to the Pleasure of your Company in my Retirement, makes me wish to have you along with me, if it be agreeable to you. I shall always make it my Study, Madam, said I bowing, to comply with what you are pleased to direct, and in the present Case, Self-Interest, without any other Consideration, must, no doubt, make that little Jaunt agreeable. Very well, said the Governor, I think I am in a fair Way to lose my Cause; but to shew you both, Ladies, what a good natured Creature I am, tho' you have the Cruelty to deprive me of your Company, I will nevertheless contribute to your Diversion in the Country, by sending my travelling Doctor to pay you a Visit; he has wandered all over the World, is a most facetious diverting Companion, and the ablest Physician, I believe, in the Universe. In this last Quality he cannot but be serviceable to Miss Tencin, and he will besides divert you both greatly with his entertaining Travels; so that I expect Thanks from you both for procuring you the Conversation of this surprising Man; and indeed so you may, thought I within myself, when I give him the hearing, or you, good Governor, an Opportunity of giving
me

me any of his diabolical Powders : O ! that I were this Moment with my dear *Mirella* at her Aunt's, or any where but with such Devils as I am got among ; I except my Father whom I cannot imagine to be in the Plot. After Coffee, Cards were called for, from which I excused myself, on Pretence of a Head-ach, and when they were all engaged at *Basset*, I took an Opportunity to slip up Stairs into my Chamber, ordering a Footman, who was in waiting at the Door, to tell *Mirella* that I wanted to speak with her ; and she no sooner entered the Room than I started from my Chair, and flew to get her in my Arms, where I held her a considerable Time, the Tears gushing from my Eyes, and my Breast ready to burst with the swelling Sobs. O ! Heavens ! cry'd she, drowned in Tears, in what a Situation do I see you ! Has any Misfortune happened to you below ? Tell me, Madam, tell me quickly, the Cause of those Tears and Sobs, and if the Loss of my Life can make you easy, I will with Pleasure sacrifice it. Alas ! my dear Friend, said I at last, we must pack up and be gone ; I find by this Day's Conversation that you told me nothing but Truth ;

every thing is settled according to the Plan laid down in the Letter ; my Father sets out to-morrow Morning for the Island of *Caprea*, the Countess for her Country house with me as her Companion, where we are to be visited by this itinerant Quack, who is to favour me with a Dose of his admirable Powder, by which I am to become a Prostitute to this Devil of a Governor. Now, my dear Friend, (for such I have hitherto found you) are you still willing to share in my Fortune, and to leave this House and City this very Night ? Yes, Madam, cried she, with a Vivacity which could not spring but from a Heart animated with a real Affection, not only this House and City, but the whole Kingdom, nay even the whole World, will I leave to serve you. My Eyes gushed afresh from that softening Influence which Sentiments so noble, so kind, have upon a tender, grateful, Heart : and I was now taught by Experience, that as Language is not capable of painting, in true Colours, the Joy we feel on such Occasions, it bursts forth in watry Streams, and saves our Hearts from the dangerous Effects of a too joyful Dilatation ; just as in the Case of
Grief,

Grief, of which the Excess must be softened in a Flood of Tears, or our Hearts be totally depressed by the heavy Load. How shall we contrive to get my Clothes and Linnen conveyed out of the House? And how shall we manage to get ourselves transported to your Aunt's?

I have another Aunt in Town, answered she, and your Things shall be sent to her House; not in Trunks, because they might be taken Notice of going out of the House; we must make Use of your Sheets as a Wrapper, and the Servants will take it for dirty Linnen going to be washed. I will this Minute take a Step to my Aunt's, and as her Son has a Chaise which he hires, I will secure that, if it is in the Way, or cause him to procure another for us, which he shall drive himself for more Security. In the mean time you must take the Trouble yourself to make up the Bundle, that it may be ready when I return with a Woman to carry it along.

I shall think it no Trouble to serve myself, said I, and you shall find every thing ready at your Return, so away went she, and I after lock-

locking the Door, began to pack up my Alls, in which I was very expeditious, and every thing was ready by the time *Mirella* returned. As my Jewels consisted only of a Diamond Necklace, Ear-rings, and some Rings, I put them with some Gold broad Pieces, and some *Spanish* Pistoles in my Pocket. I was afraid the Woman would not be able to carry such a Load, but being a strong masculine Sort of a Creature, she made nothing of it, and walk'd as if she had carried no Burthen on her Shoulders.

Mirella and I remained about half an Hour after she was gone, and locking the Door, we went down Stairs. I gave the Servants Orders to tell my Lady if she happened to call for me, or *Mirella*, that I was gone to *Vespers*, and would return in an Hour or so ; but the Company, I was told, was so deeply engaged in Play, that neither she nor any of them had any Thoughts of me, which was a lucky Circumstance. In short, we got off with flying Colours, and found the Chaise waiting for us ; but before we came near the Door, *Mirella* bethought herself that it would not be prudent to get into the Chaise there, but desired that

I would stay where I was with my Mask on, till she gave her Cousin orders to drive to a private Street in our way, and there stop till we came to him ; all which was done ; and we followed the Chaise at a distance to the Place appointed, where we got into it, without seeing or being seen by any Mortal.

WE were soon out of the Gates of the City, and performed our Journey in less than five Hours. *Mirella's* Aunt appeared to be a little surpris'd on our Arrival, which her Niece perceiving told her that, with my Permission, she wanted to speak a few Words to her in another Room. They retir'd ; and upon their Return the Aunt got me in her Arms, and told me, that I should command her House as much as if it were my own. But don't you think, Madam, said she, that as my Niece has come along with you, the Countess, who knows me, will send here to search for you ? To be sure she will, said I : This is what did not occur to *Mirella* nor me ; and I do not think myself by any means safe here, at least till they leave off searching, and have lost all hopes of finding me out. Well ! said the good Woman, I have a younger Sister, who lives
in

in a very retired Place about ten Miles from this, she is a Widow as I am, has a House where you can be better accommodated than here, and I can depend upon her Secrecy and Discretion as much as I could upon my own: I will accompany you there to-morrow Morning; and I make no doubt of our being well received, and that you'll be pleased with her Company, when you come to be a little acquainted. Her Husband, who was a Gentleman, married her for her Beauty and Good-Sense, and has left her in very good Circumstances, with an only Daughter, who is very well married.

BUT could we not, said I, were we to set out now, reach it this very Night, or lie at an Inn by the way, in case we could not get to our Journey's end in time? for I must confess that I cannot be easy here; being persuaded, that when they break open my Chamber-door, and find that my things are removed, and that *Mirella* is fled along with me, the Countess will conclude that we are here, and immediately send after us; and if that should happen, it would be better, I think, that you were at home than absent; by which means
the

the Persons who come in quest of me can have no suspicion of your being privy to our Elopement, provided none of your Servants discover us; and therefore a Letter of Recommendation from you to your Sister will introduce us, and with it we will directly set out in the same Chaise that brought us here.

I think, replied Mrs. *Bolini*, (the Widow's Name) that what you observe is perfectly right, and I will this minute write a short Line to my Sister, since I must be deprived of the Pleasure of waiting on you myself: and I, said *Mirella*, will go and consult with our Coachman about our second Journey, and whether he thinks his Horses will be able to perform it? If they should not, said her Aunt, you shall have two of mine to draw the Chaise along.

Mirella went out, and when she returned told us, that her Cousin was in no Pain about his Horses performing, after they had got some Corn, which he had now given them; the only Difficulty is his not being well acquainted with the Road. Let not that trouble you, said the Aunt from the Closet where she was writing, one of my Servants shall be your Guide:

Mirella

Mirella call such a one to me, added she naming him, and I will give him Orders to get a Horse ready immediately ; which was done accordingly, and, after taking some Refreshment for ourselves, we set out. Mrs. *Bolini* embraced me with the Tenderness of a Mother, and wishing me a good Journey, told me softly, that she would very soon make me a Visit.

THO' we travelled at a great rate, yet as we had Hills to ascend and descend, it was ten o'Clock at Night before we reached our Journey's end. When we alighted we were carried into a Parlour ; and the Servant told us that her Lady, not expecting Company so late, was undressed in order to go to Bed ; but that she would wait upon us in a very little time. *Mirella* had not seen this Aunt of her's since she was a Child ; however, she told the Servant that being her Niece, and having a Letter from her Sister *Bolini* to her, she would be obliged to her, if she would go and ask her Mistress's Permission for her to wait upon her in her Bed-chamber, where she wanted to speak to her in private ; the Maid returned immediately, and desired *Mirella* to come along with her.

ABOUT

ABOUT ten Minutes after the Aunt and the Niece entered the Parlour, where I was sitting in a very pensive Posture. I never in my Life saw a Woman of a better Appearance; there was such a Mixture of Majesty and Sweetness in her Face, that I was struck with surprise. She advanced and embraced me with great Marks of Friendship, and begged a thousand Pardons for her Rudeness in not waiting upon me sooner. I ought, Madam, said I, rather to ask your Pardon for coming to your House at this unseasonable Hour; but I hope my Friend, looking at *Mirella*, has taken that Task upon her, and that you'll be so good upon your Sister's and her Accounts to excuse my Rudeness. My dear Miss, said she, my Niece has in a few Words let me a little into your Story, and I am so charmed with your Virtue and noble Character, that my only Child could not be more welcome to me than you are; and the longer you do me the Favour to stay in my poor Habitation, the more I shall reckon myself obliged to you; when we are a little better acquainted, continued she, and that you think me worthy of your Confidence, you will perhaps favour me with a par-

U

ticular

particular Account of your Affairs, but till then I will restrain my Curiosity. I have already, Madam, said I, such a favourable Opinion of your Merit, that my Friend *Mirella*, who knows all the material Circumstances of my Life, will oblige me to let you know them whenever you think proper.

HERE our Discourse was interrupted by the Maid's coming in with a Basket, in which were things proper for a Table. It seems the Moment we alighted the Mistress of the House had given Orders to get us something for Supper; and I cannot say but I was very well disposed, my Impatience to leave the other Sister's House being so great, that I thought more of my Journey than of eating. We had a very nice Fricassee of Chickens and a Brace of Partridges for Supper; and when *Mirella* and I had ate plentifully, for her Aunt had supped before we arrived, Madam *Nanchini* (this Lady's Name) asked me if I would lie in a Room by myself? No, Madam, said I, with your Permission my Fellow-Traveller and I will be Bed-Fellows; not only while I remain in this House, but while she and I remain unmarried. The Lady smiled, and said she thought

thought her Niece very happy in having, by some little Services, gained my Esteem. Little call you them, Madam ! What Obligation can possibly be greater than to owe what is dearer than Life to her Friendship? and I doubt not but when you know all she has done for me you'll be of my Opinion. As you are, no doubt, fatigued with the long Journey you have made to-day, said she, we will defer the Consideration of your Obligation to my Niece till to-morrow. In the mean time I shall only tell you, that as my House is within a hundred Yards of a large thick Wood, I can convey you into it were the House surrounded with a thousand Men, and the Governor of *Naples* at their Head, without their seeing you ; so banish all Fears while you are here : with that she rang the Bell, and when the Maid came, she lighted us up stairs to a genteel well-furnished Apartment, consisting of an Anti-chamber, a Bed-room, a Dressing-room, and a large Closet, where the Lady of the House embraced me with great Tenderness, and, after wishing me a good Night's Rest, retired to her own Apartment.

IT is to you, as the Instrument by God's Appointment, my dear *Mirella*, said I, when we were by ourselves, that I owe the Tranquillity of Mind which I at present enjoy; I find myself eased, as it were, of a heavy Load, that depressed my Spirits, and the gloomy Prospect, which I had continually before my Eyes since the Discovery of the Governor's wicked Designs, no more presents itself to my frightened Imagination; all is now calm and serene with me. Is there not in such a miraculous Deliverance a visible providential Care; first, in inspiring you with a friendly Disposition towards me; and next, in the manner of your coming to the knowledge of the hellish Plots contrived by the Enemies of my Virtue and Innocence? O! that my Soul may be inflamed with Love to thy bountiful Protector! and that it may be my constant Study, while I am in this World, to express a grateful Sense of this and many more undeserved Favours, by a constant Dependance on his Mercy and Goodness, and a perfect Resignation to his blessed Will in all the Hardships and Tryals of Life to which I may be exposed! Indeed, in all human Probability, I must move in very diffe-

different Spheres of Life, and perhaps be reduced to pass the greatest part of it in mean Employments, from which, till now, I thought my Father's Situation and Rank in the World must have exempted me; but as this fatal Marriage will accomplish his Ruin, I must of course participate of his unhappy Fate, because I could enjoy no Peace of Mind, if I did not supply his Wants while I had it in my power; so that, my dear Friend, added I, till I am satisfied that, in the worst of Events, he will have the Necessaries of Life, I shall not think myself at liberty to dispose of the Jewels which are in my possession, nor so much as think that I have the least Right to them; and as this is the Case, my Stay here must be short; for tho' your Aunt seems to be a Woman of a generous Spirit, mine is not as yet become so mean as to take an Advantage of her Good nature; and I would sooner chuse to be in the Station of her Servant, than to sit at her Table as a distressed Gentlewoman, whom she entertains out of Charity; and you may believe me, my dear *Mirella*, when I tell you that the Thoughts of parting with you adds not a little to my Affliction.

I am far from blaming, Madam, answered she, your Dislike of laying under Obligations which you cannot return: even I, who am not endowed with such Delicacy of Sentiments as may be expected in one of your Rank and Education, could hardly put up with such Meanness of Spirit; and I think it ought rather to be called a noble Pride, which prevents our submitting to certain Cendescensions, that our Benefactors would perhaps think they had a right to require of us, for their charitable Assistance, and, which is still worse, look upon us as ungrateful, did we not basely comply with what, in our unhappy Case, they would unjustly think a Duty incumbent upon us; but I can see no occasion for your running the Risk of such Treatment from any Mortal, even tho' you were stripped of all your Effects. How many young Gentlewomen of good Families have been reduced, and obliged to get their Bread by their Needles? And what should hinder you, not only to follow their Example, but, with the Help that I can give you, to live as handsomely as many young Women at this present time do in *Naples*, by taking in Work from Shopkeepers? Let me therefore
beg

beg of you not to afflict yourself nor me with the Thoughts of our Separation ; my Heart is so attached to you, that I will rise early, sit up late, and, in short, work the very Skin off my Fingers, before you want what will satisfy one of your moderate Desires.

THERE is so much Generosity, so much Friendship in your kind Offer, my dear *Mirella*, that I am charmed ; but, added I with a Smile, do not your own Arguments, which you have just now advanced, teach me to reject your Offer, unless it was in my Power to make a suitable Return ? Which in my reduced State I cannot propose, otherwise than by working the Skin off my Fingers, as you propose to do for me ; and I should rather chuse to put up with any thing a Degree better than my old Bread and Water Diet, before I would undergo such a Punishment, either for the sake of my Back or my Belly. As for rising early, and setting up late, I am content that it be one of the Articles of our Agreement ; and which is more, I will not be scrupulously nice upon the Difference of our Work in Quantity ; that is, tho' I am persuaded you can and will do a great deal more than I can pretend to,

yet

yet I will share with in the whole of our Earnings; and what greater Proof can I give you of the Desire I have to live with you, than by overlooking a manifest Injustice, which I am guilty of in taking a Share of what properly belongs to you. But do you know what a whimsical Salvo I have found out to make me easy about the unequal Partition of what we gain? Do as you would be done by is, you know, the golden Rule, which ought to direct all our Actions in civil Life. Now, as I am very confident, that were it in my power to exceed you as far as you do me in Needle-work, and that my Earnings surpassed yours as much as I shall be behind with you, I would nevertheless share equally with you, with all the Pleasure imaginable; and, therefore, I conclude, that you ought to do the same by me.

HAD you not satisfied your scrupulous Delicacy, Madam, answered she, by this just, not whimsical, Way of reasoning, I intended to have proposed an Expedient which, in my Opinion, puts things upon a right Footing in every Respect, and intitles you to all the Profits of my Work, let them be ever so great. You know, Madam, added she, that I am by Fortune

tune condemned to act in the Station of a Servant, Why may not you hire me as such, and then you have a just right to what I can earn? All the Recompence I demand is, my daily Bread, and Clothes suitable to my Condition; and that you may not be uncertain, whether such an Agreement will turn out to your Advantage, let us make a Tryal for a few Months, and by keeping an exact Account of what my Work brings in, and what you expend for my Victuals, and some little Necessaries which perhaps I may want, you can then form a Judgment, whether keeping me will be an Advantage or a Loss to you. No, no, *Mirella*, cried I, you shall never be with me, but as a Bosom Friend, to whom I already owe Obligations that I can never repay: That we may live together, is as much my Desire as yours, but it must be on no other Footing, than as Friends and Partners; for as to Birth, mine is not, I dare say, preferable to yours, and would it not be a monstrous Piece of Folly and Injustice to impute it as a Crime to you, that your Father was not rich enough to keep you from being a menial Servant. Were my Great Grandfather alive (who was nothing but a poor wretched Peasant) how would he be surpris'd to see the
Grandeur

Grandeur of his Offspring, who would, no doubt, be ashamed to own him as their Progenitor, and were our Nobility, who are so intoxicated with their elevated Stations, to go back to their Sources, of which many are far from being remote, What a Check must it give to their Vanity to find that the aggrandizing of their Families, was owing to some artful Villains who robb'd the Widow and the Orphan, or were enriched by doing the dirty Work of a plotting Statesman, or serving him in his Pleasures, of which Instances, and not a few, might if necessary be given ; from all which I conclude, that it is no less preposterous to idolize Grandeur and Riches, than it is to despise those on whom Fortune has not bestowed such Advantages, and that if we allow our selves to be guided by Reason the virtuous Man and Woman will be the only Objects of our Esteem, let their Origin be ever so obscure, and their Situation in Life ever so mean. I would not, however, have you believe that I am such a perfect *Stoic* as to be absolutely insensible of the Grandeur, the Riches and Honours of Life ; they have, it must be confessed, seducing Charms, and present us with pleasing Prospects, particularly at your Age and mine. Gold attracts

attracts every Heart, and all are delighted with the Advantages it procures. The grave Philosopher is drawn insensibly from his deep Speculations to gaze on the yellow Idol ; and the more devout Priest, notwithstanding his Harangues upon the Contempt of Riches, and his Exhortations to condemn those Baubles, those Vanities, and, in general, all the transitory Enjoyments of Life, is nevertheless captivated himself with the bewitching Metal : All this may be accounted for, from that innate Principle of Self-Love and Self-Preservation, by which we are invincibly attached to this grand Sweetner of all the bitter Pills of Life : However, I still persist in my Conclusion with Regard to the Objects of our Esteem. But I now find my Eyes almost shut, so that if you please, we will defer what remains to be said on this Subject, 'till we are refreshed by Sleep ; so by mutual Consent we undrest and went to Bed, which the Fatigue of the Day, at least to me that had not as yet recovered my former Strength, rendered very comfortable.

NEXT Morning about Eight we got out of Bed, and upon my coming out of the Closet, (where I had retired for a few Minutes after I

was

was dressed) I found the Lady of the House in the Bed-chamber, who, after inquiring very kindly how I had passed the Night, conducted me down Stairs to Breakfast, and when it was over, she proposed our taking a Walk towards the Wood, which she had mentioned as a Sanctuary for me, in Case I was pursued by my Enemies ; besides, Miss, said she, if you have any Curiosity about plain and simple Nature, you may here view it in all its Beauties, and see something new in the Sylvan Scenes that surround you ; but to a Lady who has perhaps never been without the Gates of *Naples*, the ratling of Coaches would be more agreeable, than the rustling of Leaves, or the warbling of Birds, and the gay Diversions of the Town infinitely preferable to the innocent Amusements of a rural Life, such as we had amidst the various Charms of natural Beauty, which every way present themselves to our View, and inspire us with Sentiments of Admiration and Love to the bountiful Author of Nature, who charms our Senses, and ravishes our Minds with innocent Delight ; But this is a Language unknown perhaps to Miss *Tencin*, who cannot, I suppose, perceive any Charms in

in such a rude Retreat as this, fit to engage the Attention of a fine Lady.

HERE are indeed, continued she, no Assemblies, Plays, nor Balls; none of the splendid Allurements with which Ladies of what the World calls polite Taste are so apt to be captivated. We Rustics laugh at all such tumultuary Diversions, and look upon what you consider as the very Essence of Happiness, as the Excess of Madness and Folly; so that if you despise us as a Parcel of dull splenetick Mortals, we pity you as giddy Creatures, who hurry through the different Stages of Life, without Thought or Reflection, and still unsatisfied or rather disgusted with the Enjoyment of those very Pleasures which you pursue with so much Ardour: As a Proof of this, I could appeal to the Experience of every Man and Woman who act their Parts in high Life; and I dare say, if they speak their real Sentiments, they will own that their most elegant Entertainments and Diversions are continually attended, in one Shape or other, with such Disappointments and bad Consequences, that they themselves are ashamed to have been so fond of them. I could instance many Persons who have abandoned the

publick Diversions upon this very Account; but I shall only mention the Countess of *Liriano*, with whom I was acquainted formerly at *Naples*.

THIS Lady was a most beautiful, virtuous Woman, but so passionately fond of all publick Diversions, that if she happen'd to stay at Home a whole Day, she was quite unhappy. The Count was a grave thoughtful Man, and his Wife's rambling Temper gave him great Uneasiness; he often endeavoured, with all the Rhetorick he was Master of, to dissuade her from a Course of Life, which not only exposed her to the Criticisms of some malicious People about Town, but greatly impaired her Health; but she answered all his Lectures with a Laugh, telling him, that what a Woman loved, never did her Harm; besides, added she, the unavoidable Cares of Life are so painful, that if we can soften them by innocent Diversions, Who can justly find Fault with us? If the Expence of my Diversions be what pinches you, pray consider that other Ladies of Fashion are as expensive as I am this way; and, besides, addicted to gaming, where they oftener lose than win; and this you cannot lay to my Charge.

Charge. Well, well, said he smiling, you are a very good Council in your own Cause, and I, as a partial Judge, pronounce this Sentence, that you go on in your own way, and indulge a foolish Passion, which I find cannot be cured, but by the wonderful Operations of that never-failing Remedy, which your Sex are said to carry always about with them, I mean *Inconstancy*, which I hope will e'er long give you a Disgust at what you now so much doat upon. As I should be glad to oblige you, answered she, I will attend the publick Diversions more exactly for the future than I have hitherto done, that I may hasten the Accomplishment of your Wishes; and with that View I will go this Night to a Ball, at which I should not otherwise have been present; so that you must allow I give you, or rather, to speak more properly, I give that *Inconstancy*, which you are pleased to term the *Vade Mecum* of our Sex, very fair Play. But she, as well as the Count, little thought that this would be the last of those Diversions she ever would be at, otherwise the Husband, rather than dissuade her from going, as he did, would have pressed her to it; and 'tis very probable that had she in the least suspected, that her going to this Ball

would have given her a Disgust to those Sort of Diversions, • all her Husband's Intreaties would not have prevailed with her to do a thing, which would prove the means of metamorphosing her into one of those dull stupid Animals, who can sit droning at home from Morning to Night, and think of nothing but the Government of their House and Family. But as she was a Woman of strict Honour and Virtue, and extremely charitable, Providence made her sensible of her Folly by the Means of a severe Fit of Sickness, which her having over-heated herself with dancing at this Ball, and drinking Lemonade to Excess, brought upon her, and in spite of the Endeavours of the ablest Physicians of *Naples*, conducted her to the very Gates of Death.

HER Distemper was a violent confirmed Pleuresy, and her Blood was changed from red into an amber Colour. In her Agonies she would often desire her Husband, who was Day and Night at her Bed-side, not to be grieved for a Wretch, who, to satisfy a Madness offensive to Heaven, as well as to him, was a Self-Murderer; but if it should be the Will of Heaven, said she, to prolong
my

my Life, I will endeavour by a regular Conduct to make some Attonement for my past Follies. The same Providence, which had contrived the Means of her Punishment, brought about her Recovery contrary to the Expectation of her Physicians, who had given her up for lost.

As there are a great many female as well as male Quacks who have sometimes *Nastrums* that do Wonders, a certain travelling Doctor hearing of the Countess's Distemper, and that the Physicians had given her over presented herself at the Count's, and having told one of the Servants that she had something to communicate to his Master which would be agreeable to him, she was immediately introduced. Sir, said she to the Count when she entered the Par-
lour where he was, I am informed that your Lady is given over as incurable by the Physicians, and therefore I come to offer you my Service: I know her Distemper, and as I have cured many in her Case, I hope, with the Assistance of Heaven, I shall be able still to preserve her Life. I am not ignorant, added she, in what Discredit People like me are with the better Sort, and I own that many of us
X 3 are

are justly despised, because they pretend to cure all Sorts of Distempers; but that is not my Case: I have only Recipes for particular Diseases, of which your Lady's is one. I have tried the Experiment on above a hundred Patients, and it never once failed. Here is the Medicine, continued she, pulling out of a Case a Phial containing a Liquid of a reddish Colour, of which, to prevent any Suspicion or Apprehension you may be under of Danger to your Lady in taking it, I will, in your Presence, drink a full Glass of it, and if she does not find herself eased of that terrible Stitch in drinking three Glasses, allowing an Hour betwixt each Glass, I will not only ask no Payment for my Tincture, but submit to what corporal Punishment you think proper to inflict; and this, with the Sentence of the Physicians, who I am told have already condemned her, ought to make you fond of trying an Experiment which may, under God, recal her from the Gates of Death, and can do her no Harm.

THE Count after causing her to swallow a Glass of her Tincture, took the Phial and carried it into the Room where his Lady lay,
and

and made her drink a Glass of it, and then ordered that the Doctrix should be brought into the sick Person's Bed-chamber, where she was to remain till they saw the Effect of her Medicine. She told the Count that the first Glass would throw her into a gentle Sweat and make her drowsy, but that she must not be allowed to sleep, 'till after the third Glass. It happened as she said; upon drinking the second Glass her Pain was much abated, and the third not only removed her Fever, but made her as free from Pain as I am now.

SHE continued taking this Tincture one Glass in the Morning and another at Night for a Week, and in that Time she was restored to perfect Health to the great Surprise of her Physicians, who were all obliged to confess that this was a wonderful Cure. They tasted the Tincture, and tho' by the Taste and Smell they pretended to know some of the Ingredients, yet they could not with all their Learning and Knowledge make the Analysis of the Medicine, and I believe I may without Breach of Charity say, that some of them would have been better pleased that the Countess had made her Exit, than that she should have been cured by

by an illiterate Woman after they had decreed her a dead Person, and declared upon a Consultation of the whole Faculty that it was not in the Power of Art to keep her alive twenty four Hours. The Count was in Raptures of Joy not to be expressed, and would by no Means part with this famous Doctrix, whom he obliged to stay a couple of Months, and made her a Present of five hundred Ducats when he dismissed her.

THIS Fit of Sickness so effectually cured the Countess, that no Persuasion could prevail with her ever after to go to any publick Diversions; Books and sober Conversation were her only Amusements, and I have often heard her since exclaim against her own Folly, for taking up so much of her Time with those dangerous and sinful Extravagancies. It is true, continued she, that all your City Ladies are not so passionately fond, nor make themselves such Slaves to those sort of Diversions as the Countess did for some Time, but are their Eyes so delighted with that Delicacy and Variety of Scenes which our enamelled Fields offer to our View? What a Difference between the sweet Perfumes of our flowery Meads, and the nauseous

nauseous Breathings of a Crowd of People in a confined Place? And tho' you may be in Raptures with a *Castrato's* effeminate Voice, to me the Nightingale's melodious evening Song to his tender Mate is delightfully ravishing; and to conclude, for I have too far encroached upon your Patience, our Country Amusements have this remarkable Advantage over your City Diversions, that the more we give into them, the better Health we enjoy; whereas yours have the quite contrary Effect, and often corrupt the Morals, as well as destroy the Constitution.

FOR my Part, Madam, answered I, finding that she here left off speaking, I shall not pretend to give my Opinion of the Difference of a City and a Country Life, being alike ignorant of the Pleasures of both; but so far as I can make a Judgment of my present Temper and Disposition, the latter seems to be what I would chuse, particularly during the fine Season of the Year, when our Eyes must be delighted with Nature dressed out in all her Gaiety, and when the Air is perfumed with the sweet Odours of numberless Flowers, but when *Hyem* with furious Rage strips Trees, and
Flowers,

Flowers, and Plants, of all their beautiful Dress, the Fields around us shew Nature drooping and in dire Distress, and then the Prospect must be as melancholy as it is now delightful ; for which Reason methinks I should be fond to leave the Country, before boisterous Winter has commenced its dreadful Operations ; for who can view the naked Tree, the blasted Flower, that pleasing Verdure with which the Fields were cloathed no more to be seen, without being deeply affected with the melancholy Prospect every time they throw their eyes around them !

THO' I could, my dear Miss, said she, make it appear that Providence has not only studied our Welfare, but even our Satisfaction in the Variety of Seasons and their regular Succession, and that what you call Distress of Nature is only a necessary Course of Physick (if I may be allowed the Expression) which it goes through in order to be more healthy, and appear afterwards in that Beauty, which, without such a Purgation, it would not have attained to. I shall not at this time enter upon that extensive Subject, but refer it to some other Occasion when I shall have the Assistance
of

of our Curate, who will, I believe, convince you that a rural Life, even when Nature seems to be in her mourning Weeds, is still preferable to the noisy and tumultuous Diversions of a crowded City.

WHEN we had walked about a Mile in the Wood still to an Ascent, we came at last to a little Pavilion made of Wood, from which we had the most delightful Prospect that ever I had seen; spacious Meadows and Fields extended to an inconceivable Distance, where our Sight was only bounded by a clear Sky that seemed to meet the Ground, and in some Places by Hills which could hardly be distinguished from the gilded Clouds, in which they wrapped themselves. Our Eyes at one View took in abundance of little Villages, which arising from amidst the Trees at a great Distance agreeably diversified the delightful Landscape. Upon the Sight of this ravishing Scene the Lady could not hinder herself from making the following rhapsodical Exclamation.

“ O Nature! how beautiful, how lovely
 “ are all thy Works! with what Pleasure do
 “ I gaze around on what charms my Senses,
 “ and

"ravishes my Mind with innocent Delight!
 "If the inanimate Creation can bestow such
 "Pleasures to a rational Mind, how much
 "nobler must be the Satisfaction with which
 "superior Beings view the beauteous Order
 "of the intellectual World, infinitely trans-
 "cending the most elegant Dispositions of
 "Matter!"

THIS Rhapsody led us insensibly into mor-
 alizing on the various Beauties of Nature, and
 comparing the natural Connection there is be-
 tween the exterior Arrangements of Bodies
 which are formed to delight our Senses, and
 the Proportions of internal Beauty, the Pro-
 priety of Action, and the native Amiableness
 of an honest, generous, and upright Mind.
 That as Nature had carefully formed the va-
 rious Senses with different Powers, adapted to
 convey Delight to the Soul, from the Multitude
 of outward Beings which surround us, so she
 had been no less careful in forming the Mind
 with States and Passions for directing its Pur-
 suit to Objects capable of raising it to the
 sublimest Pleasures; while those Pleasures not
 only result from its Purity, but are the very
 Means of exalting it to still higher Degrees of
 Perfection and Happiness.

"WHAT

“ WHAT a delightful Sensation does this
“ azure Dome give the Eye! said the Widow;
“ could the Earth be covered with a more
“ beautiful Ceiling! a finer Canopy! what a
“ pleasing Verdure clothes the Ground, while
“ it meets the Limits of the high Arch of
“ Heaven with intermingling Shades! a beau-
“ tiful Carpet for Man and Beast! but all
“ lovely as this Scene appears, how much
“ does it fall short of the nobler Landscape of
“ the Mind! The honest Man, whenever
“ he pleases to review his Actions, and con-
“ template the Situation of his Heart, per-
“ ceives a pleasing Extasy arising from every
“ Instance of his Integrity. He sees a Sy-
“ metry even more transportingly beautiful
“ than this of Nature. A Proportion and
“ Arrangement of Passions incomparably more
“ pleasing than all the various Dispositions of
“ Light and Shade, of Woods and Pasture,
“ of bubbling Springs and falling Torrents.
“ How vast the Difference between the most
“ lovely Scenes which can arise from the Mo-
“ difications of Matter in its most complete
“ Perfection; between the Tones of the most
“ melting and harmonious Accents, and the

“ nicer and more delicate Sensations of an approving Conscience ! An engaging Instance of the divine Wisdom and Benevolence to constitute the very means of advancing the Happiness of others, the means of procuring the sublimest Pleasures to ourselves.”

BUT, my dear Miss, said she when she stopped, will you not conclude, from the Fondness you see me have to talk so much in the rhapsodical Strain, that I am not a little smitten with the Spirit of Enthusiasm, or at least that I want to shew you how high I soar in the sublime ? It is not, added she, my usual Custom to be so free with Strangers, but the little I know of your Character, by what my Niece has already told me, and the Friendship I have conceived for you, induces me to be as free with you as if our Acquaintance were of a much longer Date ; and I hope you will, in return to my frank Behaviour with you, now favour me with the Particulars of your Life, for which my Niece had your Allowance, but I should rather hear them from yourself, if you'll take that Trouble upon you.

O! Madam, cried I clasping her in my Arms, (for I found this charming Woman had gained my Heart) you have a Right to demand every thing of me, and if it were in my Power to give you stronger Testimonies of my Esteem and Friendship than what you require, do me the Justice to believe that I would with the greatest Pleasure embrace any Opportunity of giving you Proofs of them, and of a sincere Attachment.

My Story is but short, but upon my first Entry on the Stage of Life, the Tryals I have met with, (which perhaps would not seem to be of any great Consequence to Persons of greater Experience and more fixed Principles of Virtue) appear to me severe and rigorous; and I have great Reason to be thankful to bountiful Providence for my Preservation hitherto; and as I am persuaded you will perceive by what I am going to tell you, that Heaven has made Use of my dear Friend *Mirrella* as the Instrument of my Deliverance, I hope you'll attribute to her generous Advice and Assistance any Merit that my Behaviour can lay claim to.

I then related succinctly every thing that had happened to me since my Mother's Death: Madam *Nancini* gave me a thousand tender Marks of Affection, and protested that she would never forgive me if I made any Difficulty or Ceremony of staying with her 'till such Time as I could be better elsewhere; and don't imagine, my dear Miss, said she, that you are under the least Obligations to me for such Offers. My Husband has left me a considerable Fortune; my Daughter is so advantageously settled, that she has no Occasion for the least Assistance from me, and I have been long looking out for an agreeable Companion, which I have now found, if my Company be as pleasing to you as yours is to me. Such generous Offers brought Tears in my Eyes, and I protested that while my Company was agreeable to her, I would consider nothing but to render myself worthy of her Favours; but, Madam, added I, Do you consider that you will not only have me as a Charge upon you, but likewise my Friend *Mirella*, from whom neither my Heart nor my Honour will allow me to think of a Separation?

WERE

WERE she less your Friend, answered she, than I find, she is, the Ties of Blood joined to her own Merit would, no doubt, be sufficient Motives to induce me to to make her the same Offers; and when I join to these the noble Proofs she has given of her own Virtue by assisting yours with so much Courage and Zeal, my Affection is raised to such a Pitch, that she may be very well assured not only to find in me a kind and indulgent Aunt, but a faithful Friend who will never abandon her.

Mirella threw herself at her Feet, and seizing her Hand, kissed and wet it with Tears, which was a more eloquent Representation of what she felt in her grateful Heart, than all the Acknowledgments the Tongue is capable of expressing. Madam *Nancini*, who raised her up and clasped her in her Arms, could not hinder herself from mingling Tears with those that dropt from her Niece's Eyes, and it may easily be imagined that I could not remain a dry-eyed Spectator of a Scene so moving as this.

AFTER the Aunt and the Neice had fully indulged this tender Effusion of Hearts, I got *Mirella* in my Arms, and in a Rapture, which I could not for my Life restrain, cried, It is then determined by this generous good Lady that you and I shall remain with her, 'till this Storm that threatens me is dissipated: I own that I have such a vast Opinion of her noble and generous Spirit, that I shall not refuse to bring myself under Obligations to her, which I would not accept from any other, and not even from herself had not you met with the same kind Invitation; but, Madam, said I turning to the Lady, it is upon this Condition (and I hope my Friend will not dissent from me) that if my Father's Necessities do not require my delivering him up the Jewels I have now in my Possession, but that I am left at liberty to dispose of them as I think proper, you will allow me to make a Present of a Part of them to your Daughter, if you will not accept of them yourself.

It is Time enough to think of Returns, said Madam *Nancini*, when I am entitled to them, and then you shall find that I am as much

much subjected to interested Views as another ; but I fancy, added she, at least my Stomach tells me, that it is now about the Hour of Dinner, let us therefore draw towards home ; for I imagine that what with the agreeable Prospects which we have indulged our Sight with from this Pavilion, and our long Conversation, the Time has sensibly slipt away ; besides, as we country Folks can measure Time without the Help of Clocks or Watches, by the Sun's apparent Motion from East to West, tho' in reality it is our Globe of Earth that moves round the Sun, and is the Occasion of that Motion which the Ignorant attribute to this glorious Body of Light, very well known now to all who have the least Notion of the solar System, to be fixed in the Center, and that all the Planets, the Moon, and the Earth move round it, but by long Practice and Observation we can always guess, while the Sun is visible above our Horizon, within a quarter of an Hour of the Time of Day ; and as the Sun is past the Meridian just now, I reckon it will be one o'clock before we reach home. We walked slowly down the Ascent, and I with a sort of Reluctance, for I could never, I thought, be wearied with the beautiful Prospects and Land-

Landscapes that charmed my ravished Sight; and, no doubt, one Reason of this was their Novelty, and that till then I had not the least Idea of the Beauties which Nature without Art here offered to my View.

WE scarce had done Dinner when Word was brought that Mrs. *Bolini* was just alighted from her Horse and coming in, and the Word was scarce out of the Servant's Mouth when she entered the Parlour. No Ceremony, Ladies, said she, but every one keep their Seats, and when I have satisfied a craving Stomach, I will then embrace each of you, and make you my Compliments, but 'till then you must excuse me; for this Morning's Ride has made me as hungry as a Hawk. By the Time you have eat your Soup, of which I hope there is still some to be got, said Madam *Nancini*, the Cook will have Time to get something that's hot for you. If there's any Soup, answered she, I will be glad to have it, but as for the rest hot or cold it is the same thing to me.

WHEN she had dined and the Servants were retired, now, Ladies, said she, as I can throw away a little Time upon Compliments, give me

me leave to assure you all in general, and you, my dear Miss *Tencin*, in particular, that I am heartily glad to find you all well and peaceable here, which would not have been the Case had you, Miss and my Niece, added she addressing herself to me, remained last Night at my House, which you must know was surrounded this Morning at three o'clock by an Officer and a Dozen of Halbardeers, who made me and all my Family get up, and searched the House, from Top to Bottom, with all the Exactness imaginable. Tho' I knew very well what they wanted, I asked the Officer by what Order, and upon what Account he gave my Family this Disturbance? He answered very civilly, that he came by the Governor's Orders to search my House for Miss *Tencin* and *Mirella* who had made an Elopement, and and that there were several other Parties besides his in quest of them. Pray, Sir, said I, what Reason is assigned for such an extravagant Whim? There are various Reports, Madam, answered he, but I believe the true Reason is a Mystery which few know. I am sorry that I should have been one of those pitched upon for such an Employment as this, and I shall return with more Pleasure than I came out; for I have been told by several, that Miss

Tencin

Tencin was a discreet virtuous young Lady, and that she has not come to such a strange Resolution without very strong and pressing Motives ; and some Whispers are going about which I do not think proper to mention ; however, I am very glad she is not here, nor I the Person who carries her back to *Naples*.

As my Duty obliges me, Madam added he, to give you this Disturbance, the best Attonement I can make is to rid you as soon as possible of such disagreeable Guests as we must be ; with that that he made me a low Bow and directly marched off his Party, whom I ordered a Servant of mine to follow at a Distance for two or three Miles, that I might be certain which Road they took ; for I was well resolv'd had they struck off either to right or left of the *Naples* Road to have sent a Man on Horseback to have put you on your Guard here.

THIS Relation, tho' I thought myself perfectly safe, made me tremble ; but good God, with what a Pannick was I seized when one of the Servants came running in and told us, that there was about twenty Horsemen coming up the Avenue at a large Trot ! I thought I should

should have sunk down on the Floor from my Chair. No Weaknesses cried *Madam Nancini*, pull up your Courage, my dear Miss. ——— My Life for yours. ——— Then pulling out of her Pocket the Key of a Cellar, Sister, said she, you know the Trap-Door, and the subterraneous Passage to the Wood, go this Minute with Miss *Tencin* and *Mirella* to the Place you know, and let me alone to face the Enemy. Tho' I was scarce able to walk, my Limbs trembling under me, yet I found that Fear gave me Wings; we were in a Moment at a Trap-Door in a dark Corner of a Cellar, and tho' we had a Candle in a Lanthorn along with us, I could never have found it out, had not Mrs. *Bolini* been with us. She lifted up a sort of Hatch-Door, *Mirella* went first down a Ladder about ten Feet long with the Lanthorn, I followed next, and Mrs. *Bolini* came last, making the Trap-Door fast with three strong Bolts, and removing the Ladder when she was got down. We then began our March, and when we had advanced about a hundred Paces we found three subterraneous Passages opening to the right and as many to the left; we entered into one of the three on the left, and when we had marched about fifty Paces in
this

this; we met with the same Number of Passages again to the right and left. We now changed our Route, and went to the right, and marched about a hundred Paces, where we came to a neat square Room paved with Marble, with a Table in the Middle, and half a Dozen of Chairs.

I was extremely curious to know for what Reason all these subterraneous Passages had been made, and Mrs. *Bolini* told me that Mr. *Nantini's* great Grandfather, a Man of a large Estate, having been deeply concerned in a Design of bringing about a Revolution in the Kingdom, which by a Discovery had been prevented, as he was out-lawed and a large Reward promised by the Government to any Person who should deliver him up dead or alive, he was obliged to retire into foreign Countries, but by the Interest of his Wife's Relations, who were People of great Power and of the Side of the prevailing Party, his Son, then a young Man about twenty, was put in Possession of his Father's Estate, by way of free Gift from the Crown; and he took care to support his Father abroad in a very grand Manner as long as he lived.

As

As no Kingdom in *Europe* has undergone more Revolutions than ours, nor oftener changed its Masters, this Gentleman took a Whim to cut out all the subterraneous Passages you have now seen, at a very great Expence, imagining, no doubt, that some time or other they would be of Use to him or his; and you see, added she smiling, that this Day they preserve you from falling into the Hands of your Enemies.

I happened to throw my Eyes towards the Door of which I had not taken any Notice, at my coming into the Room, and observing that the Wood was not only of a great Thickness but almost covered over with Iron Bars, I asked the Reason of so strong a Door? The Reason is, said she, that in case this Party, who are searching for you, should find out the Passage (which is ten Thousand to one odds if they will) before they could break open this Door, you should be far enough from them; for you must know that there's another Passage from this to the Middle of a Labyrinth, where there's another Trap-door, by which we will enter into Day-light, when we leave these dark Abodes: Now I desire

you and *Mirella* may look out for the Door which opens into a Passage from this, and try if you can find it.

WE searched every Corner, but could see no Door nor any thing that looked like it in the Walls or in the Floor that could make us imagine there was any Trap-door there, as the Marble Stones seemed to be joined with so much Closeness and Art; well, said she laughing, since you cannot find out the Secret, let us remove this Table, which was placed on a square Frame, and covered the Trap-door made of Wood, painted in such a manner that it appeared exactly like one of the Pavement Stones. We had here another Ladder by which we descended to a new Passage, and this conducted us to a Trap-door under the Labyrinth, from which by means of a little Window cut thro' the Hedges, we had a View of the House, and could see every body that went in or came out on our Side, but not on the opposite Front till they were at the Distance of half a Mile from the House.

AFTER we had remained here about an Hour, we saw the Party marching off, and about

about half an Hour afterwards we observed Madam Nancini coming our Way, which gave me great Joy. I flew to get her in my Arms the Moment she entered the Part of the Labyrinth where we were, and she, returning my Embraces with great Tenderneſs, told me ſmiling, I have had a terrible Fellow to deal with, who thought to have frightened me with his bullying, but I ſoon made him draw in his Horns; however he has ſearched every Hole and Corner in the Houſe, proteſting that he had certain Advice of a Chaiſe with two Ladies in it that came this Way laſt Night; that may very well be, ſaid I, and there's ſcarce a Day in the Week without Coaches or Chaiſes paſſing this Way; but as it is needleſs for me to tell you I know not where the Perſons you want are, you may ſearch my Houſe as much as you pleaſe. That I will take Care to do, ſaid he, and if I find them you will, I fancy, repent your having concealed them. I neither dread you nor him who ſent you, answered I with an Air of Indignation, upon that Score, ſo do your Duty, the ſooner the better, becauſe your Company is not ſo agreeable as to wiſh the Continuance of it. After he and his Gang had made a thorough Search from the Garrets to the Cel-

lars, and not only peeped into every place where they had any Notion a Person might be concealed, but over-hawled every Bed in the House, they searched all the Office-houses, Stables, and the very Barns not excepted, and thank God had only their Trouble for their Pains.

WHEN the Search was over I told the Officer with a Sneer that I supposed the Governor was mightily concerned for the young Lady's Elopement, since he ordered Parties to range up and down the Country in quest of her ; I suspect, added I laughing, that as he passes for a Man of a very amorous Disposition he intended to make a Mistress of the Consul's Daughter, and it would seem by her Flight that his Addresses were by no means agreeable. Who told you, Madam, said he, that his Excellency had any such Design? I do not say that it was really so, answered I, but only as every body knows him to be a Man of Gallantry, and that I have been told that Miss *Tencin* is a great Beauty, I concluded that his Excellency's Heart was touched, which made him take so much Trouble about her Recovery ; but as she could not but conclude, as

Mi-

Mirella had gone with her, that my Sister *Bolini's* House and mine would be directly searched, it would have been very imprudent in her to think of sheltering herself with either of us. He made no Reply, but went out without so much as bidding me farewell, or even making me a Bow ; so that we had as little Ceremony at our Parting as at our Meeting.

I made a great many Excuses for the Disturbance she had met with upon my Account. Make no Apologies, said she, upon that Score for I think it is my Duty and every Mortal's, who has the least Sentiments of Honour or Honesty, to protect Persons in your Case ; and it gives me great Pleasure to think that you are in a Place of Safety, and that all the wicked Schemes of this Beast of a Governor will prove abortive.

As I expect a Visit from our honest Curate we will now return home ; and tho' I believe there's no Danger in going the Road I came, yet for the more Security, we will retire by the subterraneous Passages ; but said *Mirella* hastily, the Candle is burnt out ; no Matter, said *Madam Nancini* we will find a Supply. She

then ordered her Neice to bring a Candle and Lanthorn, under which there was a Drawer, and in it a Flint and Steel, and several Pieces of Candle; so that once more we plunged under Ground, and were conducted by Madam *Nancini*, who told us that all the Passages to the right and left, except the one we had taken when we came out, were only made with a Design to render the true one the more difficult to be found out; that each of them were about a hundred Paces long, and terminated in such a little square Room as you have seen, but without any Trap-doors; so that on a Supposition the Trap in the Cellar were found out, they might wander long enough under Ground, before they found out the right Passage; as there are twelve in all, and but one that conducts to the Labyrinth.

ABOUT half an Hour after we were got home, the Curate arrived, a venerable old Gentleman, whose Looks bespoke the inward Satisfaction of the pious Man, unmixed with that sour and gloomy Shade, which the Checks of Conscience throw on the Countenance of the Debauchée, even in the Height of his Gaiety.

AFTER

AFTER the first Compliments were over, Madam, said he to the Lady of the House, I am informed that you have had a very extraordinary Sort of a Visit this Morning, and, if I am not a little too curious, I should be glad to know the Meaning of it? As I cannot, added he smiling, allow myself to think that you are plotting against the State, I am at a Loss to conceive what should have induced the Government to send a Party of Soldiers to search your House? The News is already got among the Peasants, and a great many ridiculous Conjectures made about it; so that, in my Opinion, it will be proper to stop the Progress of Rumours, which may give those who do not know you, a very bad Notion of your Character; and tho' some People, whose Circumstances make them easy about the Opinion the World may have of them, may despise such Reports, yet, if we take the Thing in a religious Sense, it is a Crime for any Man or Woman to allow the Public to be prejudiced against them by Notions which have no Foundation in Truth.

Tho'

THO' you do me Justice, Sir, answered Madam Nancini, with an affected Gravity, to think that I am not concerned in carrying on Plots against the State, yet I must own that I am a suspected Person by some of the most considerable Persons in the Government, and it was with a View to find out whether their Suspicions were just or not, that my House was searched this Morning; but as they have not found what they expected, the false Reports that fly about the Country, will soon be over, without my communicating to the Public the real Cause, which you yourself, were you to know it, would, I believe, advise me to conceal.

HERE the Conversation was broke off by a Servant's coming in to lay the Cloth for Dinner, upon which the Lady went out of the Par-
lour with a Design, as we thought, to give some Directions about Dinner; but, in reality, with an Intention to speak to me in private, a Servant having come and whispered me, a little after she was gone, that her Lady desired to speak with me in her own Apartment; where I found her sitting in a very pensive Posture, and so wrapt up in Thought that she
scarce

scarce could be rouzed from it by my coming into the Room.

COME, my dear Miss, said she, and assist me by your Advice: Tho' I seemed to be under no Concern about what the Curate told me of the Reports that are spread up and down about this Affair, yet I own they give me some Uneasiness, not that I much regard what the Mob may think or say about it, but I should be glad that some of my best Friends, and particularly our Curate, were informed of the real Story; however, without your Approbation I am resolved to conceal it from every Mortal, tho' I am so certain of the Secrecy and Discretion of this good Man, that I would trust him with any thing that regarded myself; and besides, as I know him to be a Man of excellent Sense as well as of real Piety, were he to know your Story, he would be charmed with your Virtue, and greatly assist us with his Advice. Madam, answered I, tho' this Gentleman's being let into the Secret of my Adventure, were of no Service to me, yet as it will make you easy, I agree to it with all my Heart, and beg you may not give yourself a Minute's longer Uneasiness upon that Account.

I

I thank you my dear, said she, I hope it will be of Service to you, as well as a Satisfaction to me, to have this good Man in our Interest. We then returned to the Parlour, and Madam Nancini told the Curate, at large, my Story, throwing in every now and then, as she went on in the Narration, Encomiums on my Virtue, which made me blush, and in which I could have wished she had been a little more sparing.

THE Curate listened to what she told him with great Attention, and when she left off speaking, turning towards me, You may believe, Miss, said he, that nothing can give me greater Joy, than to see one of your Age endowed with so noble and virtuous Sentiments, and I hope the same kind Providence, that has preserved you from the wicked Designs of your Enemies, will not only continue to protect you, but put it out of their Power ever to accomplish your Ruin. What a melancholy Thing is it that a Man, otherwise possessed of many shining Accomplishments, should throw a Blemish on them by giving not only a Loose to sensual Appetites, but, when he finds Persuasion will not do, by having Recourse to Means which

which no Man of Honour, set aside Christianity, would attempt. This is an Instance how far, in some Constitutions, the brutal Part gets the Ascendant, and triumphs over Reason, born down with the impetuous Torrent of Lust, which blinds them to such a Degree, that they will violate all divine and human Laws to gratify it. What a mortifying Reflection must it be to every Man and Woman, who have any Sentiments of Religion, to see rational Creatures degrade themselves into mere Brutes, and, indeed, worse than Brutes, and yet we have but too too many shocking Instances in all the Countries of the World of this miserable Depravity, even in Persons who move in the highest Spheres of Life! This Morning, continued he, I was reading the terrible Effects of disappointed Love in *Carthage*, which I think, cruel as it was, is not more heinous than this new invented hellish Contrivance of our Governor. Were it not too great a Trouble to you Sir, said Madam Nancini, it would be agreeable to me, and I dare say to all this Company, that you would favour us with that Story.

As

As I have imprudently mentioned the Affair, replied he, it is but just, by Way of Punishment, that I be condemned to satisfy your Curiosity, at least by an Abridgment, for otherwise I should be obliged to give you the History of one of the Princes of *Carthage* from the Beginning to the End of his Reign; how after *Rome's* being taken by the *Goths* the Emperor *Honorius's* Neice fled to *Carthage*, where the Prince *Lorenzo* fell in Love and at last married her; of his various Successes in Wars against the *Moors*, &c. but I shall only relate, as briefly as possible, what terrible Scenes the Prime-Minister's Passion for the Princess produced at this Court.

THE Prince having got Intelligence of a new Incurfion of the *Moors* into his Territories, was obliged to leave his new married Spouse, and to head his Army. When he was ready to set forward in his Expedition, he called for *Maximanus* his Favourite, and holding *Honorio* by the Hand, *Maximanus*, said he, it is to your Fidelity that I trust this precious Jewel, and the greatest Proof you can give me of your
Zeal

Zeal and Affection, is to take particular Care of her, and to divert her during my Absence. When the Prince was gone, the Minister was mighty assiduous about the Princess, and neglected nothing that might ingratiate him in her Favour.

As he thought his Person and Accomplishment far exceeded the Prince's, or any about Court, he had a Notion, from the civil Behaviour of the Princess, whom he passionately loved, that she was not insensible of his Merit, and an innocent Whim of her's about a Picture, not only confirmed him in the Notion that she loved him, but emboldened him to make a Declaration of his Passion, without the least Apprehension of meeting a Repulse. He had for some Days solicited the Princess to have her Picture drawn by a famous Limner, that the Gallery might be graced with what would infinitely exceed all the Paintings in it: He renewed his Request so often and with such Earnestness, that the Princess at last consented, but upon Condition that the Painter should follow her Directions, which she gave *Maximianus* in writing, and these were the Words: *The Painter is to draw my Picture holding a*

Cupid between my Legs, plucking the Feathers out of his Wings which are to lie scattered about the Room, his Bow under my Foot, his Quiver upon the Ground, and the Arrows broken, with this Motto, viz. But a Goose to a good Housewife. This Writing she gave to *Maximianus*, pronouncing these Words: *Now, Maximianus, I am at your Service*, meaning that upon those Terms she was willing to gratify his Desires, and not doubting but he knew what she meant, she explained it no farther; but the vain Fool imagined that she artfully invented this Hieroglyphick to let him know that she loved him: By *Cupid between her Legs*, thought he, that she intended to express the Love between her and her Husband, whose Bow she trod under her Foot, and whose Feathers she threw away as slighting his Departure. And what confirmed his Suspicions was, that when the Picture was finished, *Come, Maximianus*, said she, *you and I will go and hang it up in my Bed-Room; bidding him reward the Painter and dismiss him*, which he did, and carried the Picture into the Princess's Bed-Chamber, and finding nobody there he without any Ceremony addressed her thus:

MADAM,

MADAM, from the first Moment I saw you^s my Heart was your Conquest, and it has been since tortured with the most violent Passion that ever Man felt, the more insufferable, that I durst not tell the Cause of my Misery, or implore Relief; but as it now seems that my Looks and Actions have spoke in a Language that your quick Apprehension understood, I could wish you had said nothing, and then by making a third Hand paint the Idea of your Mind, who knew nothing of your Meaning, you had performed the greatest Master-piece of Wit, but I am afraid — Here *Honorio* gave him such a Look that he was quite dashed, and asked him what he meant by that strange Language and insolent Behaviour? He, the most daring proud Man upon Earth, asked her what she meant by that strange Picture, and familiar Way of telling him that she was at his Service? adding the Invitation to her Bed-Room, and his Explication of the mysterious Picture, all which put together were more, he thought, than enough to give a duller Apprehension than his Encouragement. She first explained the true Meaning of her whimsical Fancy, and then added, that since her Familiarity was the Oc-

casion of such Constructions, he should have less Reason hereafter to mistake.

As my Passion is involuntary, Madam, said he, and owing to Charms too powerful for my Reason to combat, I could not help telling you the Situation of my Heart, and I must still beg that you will pity my wretched Condition, and give me some Hopes. You are unworthy, answered she, of your Prince's Favour, or my Company : With what Countenance can you look him in the Face that can be so disloyal to him or me, of whom you have entertained such a base Opinion ? In Hopes of your Amendment, however, and to screen you from your Prince's just Indignation, I will conceal your Baseness : but I protest if ever you open your Mouth upon this Subject, your Master shall know into what treacherous Hands he hath reposed so great a Trust. *Maximianus* made no Reply, but resolved to accomplish his Design by Force, if fair means would not do, having gained, by a large Bribe, one of the Princess's waiting Maids, named *Bonella*, to let him know when her Mistress was alone in an upper Room which was called the Pomegranate and Fruit Chamber, where she

she often went to pass some Moments all alone, and having been informed by his Spy one Morning that she was there by herself, *Maximianus* went directly, and appearing before her with a Dagger in his Hand pointed to his own Breast, thus addressed her : Madam, my Desires are so violent, and my Passion risen to such a Height, that I must insist on your making me happy, or that you will by a pleasing Cruelty, plunge this Instrument of Death into my Heart, to rid me of my torturing Pain. Go, base Wretch, cried she, and quench that Fire from Hell, with Tears & Repentance, for that is the only Relief thou art to expect : Upon which he advanced, and pointed the Dagger at her Breast, told her that if she would not voluntarily comply with his Desires, this should make her ; and that if she made the least Noise, he would plunge it into her Bosom, and enjoy her in her last Agonies. *Honorio* laughed in his Face, and desir'd him to look who stood behind him, and while he was turning about, whips by him, runs to the Door, and flying down the Stairs got into the long Gallery, where he certainly would have come up with her, had she not dropped her Veil, directly towards his Feet, which so en-

tangled him, that down he fell ; by which happy Accident, she got safe to her Apartment, but could not speak to her Ladies who attended, she was so out of Breath.

ONE would scarce imagine, that this Princess could be so good, or rather so simple, as to admit a Man after such an Action as this, into her Presence, or that he should have the Impudence to attempt it ; but she was scarce got into her Apartment, when he entered, and begged that he might be permitted to speak but one Word to her in private at the Window, which she, after ordering her Ladies not to stir out of the Room, granted ; where he told her, with all the Asseverations which such a Villain as he is is capable of, that he intended her no Harm, but only to make a Tryal of her Virtue, which an indiscreet Zeal and Attachment to his Master, had put him upon, and protesting by all that was sacred, that if she would be so good as to forgive, and forget this rash inconsiderate Action, he never would open his Mouth upon the Subject, or ever harbour any such Thoughts within his Breast ; adding, that as he must expect nothing but Death from the Prince, tho' what he had done was with a
View

View to serve him, he hoped she would be so generous and good, as not to mention any thing of his Folly and Madnefs.

THO' I give no Credit to your Proteftations, reply'd the Princess, with a severe Countenance, nor can any more Trust to your Promises, if you appear no more in my Presence, 'till your Master returns, I may, perhaps, take no Notice of your Offence. *Maximanus* retired, seemingly contented, but really resolved to be revenged, which he soon had an Opportunity of executing, in the most barbarous and cruel Manner.

THIS Princess was passionately fond of Flowers, and used to have the chief Gardener (whose Name was *Hortensius*) often attending her in the Gardens, and instructing her in the Names and different Orders of Flowers. *Maximanus* being informed of this by his Spy *Bonella*, he had it whispered at Court, and about the City, by his Creatures, that the Princess had Intimacies with the Gardner, that looked very suspicious, and as he had given the Public an Opportunity of talking, what he had industriously caused to be spread of the Princess's Amours,

Amours, he resolv'd to make this innocent Man the principal Actor in the tragical Plan he had laid down.

SINCE the Prince's Departure, *Amarissa* a Court-Lady, and a Favourite of *Honorio's*, had been Bed-fellow to the Princess, and *Maximianus* having been informed of this by *Bonella*, and generally before going they drank each of them, a little Glass of a certain Liquor, something like to Cinnamon-Water, she had a Liquid given her, with Orders the first Time they called for this Water, to put two Drops of the Stuff given her into each of their Glasses, which would in a few Minutes throw them into a deep Sleep, that would continue for eight or nine Hours, and this done she was to inform *Maximianus* of it.

THE very next Night this treacherous Maid gave the Princess and *Amarissa* their Dose, and ran directly to acquaint the Projector, that the Operation was so sudden, she could scarce get them into Bed. He dismiss'd her, and sent directly for *Hortensius*, to come before him, with a Design to examine him upon some pretended Accusations given in against him, and
after

after his Interrogatory he was allowed to retire with a seeming Satisfaction on *Maximanus's* Part, whose Secretary (having his Lesson given him) followed the Gardner; and commending him for his honest Dealing, and expressing his Joy it gave him that he had come off so well, invites him to drink a Glas of Wine in his Chamber. The Gardener readily accepted, and the Secretary found means to put a couple of Drops of the same sleepy Liquid, which the Ladies had got, into his Glas, which soon had its usual Effect. *Hortensius* was secretly transported into the Princess's Apartment, and, after being stript of his Cloaths, laid betwixt the two Ladies with *Henoria's* Arm about his Neck.

MAXIMANUS, next Morning early, sends Messengers to all the Members of the Council, requiring their assembling forthwith upon Affairs of the last Consequence to their Prince; and when they were all met in the Council-Chamber, he told them, that he had certain Intelligence of the Princess's having admitted *Hortensius* the Gardener, into their Master's Bed, where that base Woman was this Moment in the Arms of her unworthy Lover; and that

that he required them, in the Prince's Name, to go and verify the Fact by their own Eyes. They were all greatly surpriz'd at this News, and most of them very much afflicted ; but there was no standing out against such a Summons ; so they all went in a Body, and demanded Access to the Princess's Apartment, where they actually saw the two Ladies and the Gardener fast asleep in the Posture that *Maximianus* had reported. As he knew that this somniferous Drug, would keep them a sleep eight or nine Hours, he had ordered matters so, that about the Time of the Members of the Council's appearing they would awake.

Honorio and *Amarissa* opened their Eyes much about a Time, yet neither perceived at first, that they had any body between them. *Honorio* taking *Hortensius* to be *Amarissa*, and she the same to be *Honorio* they began to wonder, at the Light which was in the Room, and both of them complained of violent Head-aches, and all this Time, they saw none of the Persons who were in the Room, who had kept themselves, at *Maximianus*'s Desire, behind the Foot-Curtain of the Bed, till they should hear what they said. At last, *Hortensius* awakes,
and

and finding himself between two, asks, *Where am I?* Upon which, the Ladies, shrieking, cryed, *What have we here?* Then, and not till then, *Maximianus* drawing aside the Curtains, presented himself and the rest of the Company, in full View, all exclaiming against *Honorio*, as an abandoned Whore, against *Amarissa* as a vile Bawd, and against *Hortensius*, as a Villain, to be tortur'd with the worst Punishment that could be devised. He leap'd out of Bed distracted and amazed: *Maximianus* pointed to his Clothes, telling him, that he ought to remember, where he had laid them, but added, that he was no doubt in such a Hurry, to get into the Arms of his longing fair, that his Thoughts were wholly taken up with his expected Happiness. *Hortensius*, tho' under the greatest Consternation, attempted to speak, but *Maximianus* stopt his Mouth, ordering him to be carried away, and thrown into a Dungeon, telling him he should speak upon a Rack to-morrow.

THE two Ladies when a little recovered from their first Surprise, attempted likewise to speak, but were abused and insulted, particularly by *Maximianus*, who commanded them
to

to get out of Bed, in order to be committed close Prisoners in the Tower, until the Prince's Pleasure were known.

THE next Day the unhappy Gardener was put on the Rack just under the Window where the Ladies were Prisoners, that they might hear his roaring upon each Stretch they gave his Limbs; all which he bore with an unparalled Constancy, assuring them that all the Torments they could devise should not make him accuse the innocent Princess, or acknowledge himself guilty.

AFTER he had gone thro' so many Tortures that his Arms and Legs were all disjointed, and by the Report of Physicians who attended, *Maximanus* understanding that he would infallibly die under the next Torture, ordered that he should be carried back to the Jail, and his Joints set again with proper Applications not only to ease his Pains, but to prevent the bad Effects of the Fever which he now had; for he wisely considered, that if *Hortensius* should die obstinately denying the Ladies and his own Guilt, People, who inclined to *Honorio's* Side, would perhaps imagine that

that there was some unknown Mystery in this Affair. He therefore resolved to keep him alive, at least, 'till he tried whether he was as much Proof against the Offer of Riches, as he seemed to be against torturing and racking.

IN three or four Days he went to *Hortensius*, who was then in a tolerable Room; he intended first to try him in the threatening Way, and if that would not do, to tempt him with the Bait of Riches and advantageous Offers. He was no sooner in the Room where the poor Gardener lay on his Bed, than he came close up to him with Fury and Rage in his Eyes, and a Dagger in his Right Hand. Villain, said he, if thou wilt not confess thy Guilt, this Dagger shall pierce thy treacherous Heart. I have no Guilt to confess, answered he, therefore strike; which will at once free me from all the Miseries of Life. ——— *Maximus* pauses a while; at last speaks thus unto him.

COME, *Hortensius*, you shall be ruled by me: I find that you have in you the Principles of a true Friend; serve my Interest in accusing the Ladies, and expect from my Gra-

titude every thing that your Heart can desire. Away with that Thing called Honesty, so like a Feather in a Fool's Cap : Let your Conscience alone, and it will never trouble you ; it is nothing but the Idea of a fantastick Brain, and Fear first begot the Awfulness of a Deity.

It seems, reply'd *Hortensius*, that I have read better Divinity upon the Leaves of Flowers and Herbs, than you in all your Books ; your Conscience, I dare say, often speaks to you, but you will not hear it ; and troubles you too even when by your Behaviour your Mind would seem to be in a calm and quiet Disposition. — But a Thought here struck him, that by his Death, which he could not avoid by standing out, the Ladies lost the chiefest Witness of their Innocence, and that by preserving his Life, by a seeming Compliance with what *Maximianus* proposed, he could do them service, not only by informing the Prince but the whole World of what had passed between them. After this short Reflection, he altered his Stile and spoke thus : — But suppose I should hearken to what you propose, would not you yourself look upon me as the basest Fellow in the World, and

and treat me as such, when I had served your Turn? No, said *Maximanus*, Vipers never sting Vipers, tho' they gnaw their Way thro' the very Bowels of their Dams; and it is only the Property of those to love the Treason and hate the Traytor who are otherwise themselves; therefore *Hortensius* be at once both wise and happy. What would you have me do? replied he. I would have you to say, said *Maximanus*, that you was courted by those Ladies to Pleasures, whose Temptations were above Resistance. They will be blamed, not you, and you'll erect a Happiness upon their Ruins; that shall not lie within the Power of Fate to overturn. Then said *Hortensius*, Sir, I am at your Service and Disposal, direct me how I may be useful to you: Upon which the Monster *Maximanus* embraced him as the dearest of his Friends, and had him directly transported from the Jail into an Apartment of his own House, giving out every where that he had made an ample Confession and accused the Ladies, which filled them with Horror and Amazement, and tempted them to think that Providence seemed to take too little Care of human Affairs; but such Thoughts were soon laid aside, and they

were both confident that their Reputations would be vindicated either before, or after, Death.

WHEN *Maximianus* had secured *Hortensius* as he thought, and got all the Members of the Council to sign a Paper, relating all the Circumstances of *Honorio* and *Amarissa's* Intrigue with the Gardener, with a View to have it transmitted to the Prince, he considered with himself that dead Folks made no Discoveries, and therefore resolved that every Person whom he employed in this Affair should be cut off when they were no longer useful, and might prove dangerous. As *Bonella* had completed her Part she was to be the first Victim. He called for his Secretary to whom, after giving him a very large Purse of Gold, he thus spoke :

My Friend, said he, I know your Zeal and Attachment to me is such, that you'll do any thing in your Power to serve me, even without any Prospect of Advantage to yourself ; but the Affair I have now to communicate to you, will not only be advantageous to your Interest, but likewise secure both me and you from the Possibility of a Discovery
with

with regard to *Honoria's* Affair: That Girl *Bonella* may some time or other betray the Secret, which must be put out of her Power, and therefore she must be destroyed. I have already, added he, given her about four thousand Crowns in Gold, besides several other valuable Presents, I know she loves you, she confessed it to me, and begged that I would propose her to you as a fit Person to be your Wife. Now you must go and tell her that I have spoke to you very much in her Favour, but that your own Heart was a sufficient Prompter, and that you should reckon yourself the happiest Man upon Earth to be forever united to her. She will, I know, jump at the Proposal; you must then insinuate the Apprehensions you are under for her Life as well as your own, it being the common Practice among our Courtiers and great Men to destroy the Instruments of their Villanies, after the Work is done, to prevent Discoveries; for which Reason you must offer, if she thinks proper, to make your Escape with her for the Safety of you both, and to celebrate your Marriage when you are in a Place of Safety. Her Love to you and Dread of what may happen to herself will, I suppose, prevail with her to

agree to your Proposal, and in that Case you can make away with her in the first convenient Place you come to, by which Means you secure what Money and Jewels she has, and may depend upon my Favour and Protection as long as I live. Go, my Friend, and execute my Commands, upon which depends your Fortune.

THE Secretary, by Inclination as much a Villain as his Master, punctually obey'd his Orders. *Bonella* agreed to every thing without much Intreaty, and the very next Morning they were to set out, which they accordingly did after transporting her Clothes in two Trunks to a Place where the Secretary had desired she would send them, but for Fear of Accidents advis'd her to take her Money and Jewels along with her.

WHEN they set out he told her, that as he was apprehensive of being pursued by *Maximus's* Orders, when he was apprized of their Flight, which he, the most suspicious Man in the World, would attribute to Remorse of Conscience, and imagine that we would, in consequence, make Discoveries that might bring

bring his hellish Deeds to light ; it is therefore not to be doubted, added he, but that he will do all that lies in his Power to make sure of us ; for which Reason we must not follow any of the common Roads, at least, 'till we are got forty or fifty Miles from the City. I am acquainted with the Country, and will conduct you by bye Roads to an Aunt's House of mine about thirty Miles from *Carthage*, where we may remain some Weeks till the Heat of the Search is over, and then we can with Safety proceed to any remote Place of the Kingdom we think most proper. *Bonella* consented to every thing, little suspecting that she was soon to take a Journey into the other World. They crossed some Meadows, and entered, by a Footpath, into a Wood, in which they were scarce got a hundred Paces, when the Villain pulled out a Dagger, and told her that he must here finish her Life, by Orders of his Master, who could not think himself safe while she was living. I confess, said she weeping, that I meet with the just Punishment of my Crimes, but can you imagine, that the Tyrant will suffer any Man or Woman to live, who have the least Knowledge of his Villanies, or can betray him ? No, no, he will not be wicked by Halves, and

I foresee that when you return from executing his cruel Orders on me, the next Victim will be yourself. If your Professions of Love are sincere, had you not better go along with me, and by that Means not only be exempted from the horrid Crime of Murder, but also secure your own Life? But, continued she, how can I be so foolish as to talk of a Man's having any Regard for a Woman, into whose Breast he is ready to plunge a Dagger, and who, no doubt, professed Love, and proposed our Flight by Order of the bloody *Maximanus*, who by the Temptation of many fair Promises, and perhaps a Purse of Gold, together with what I have about me, has prevailed with you to be my Executioner; but if Interest be the only Motive that makes you commit or abstain from doing such abominable Actions, I have a hidden Treasure four Times the Value of what I now possess, and I am willing to inform you of the Place where it is hid, upon Condition that you will spare my Life. The hidden Treasure prevailed with this Assassin at least to delay her Death, till he was in Possession of it; and considering with himself, how he might secure her till he returned, he by Accident espies the Trunk of an old hollow Tree,

Tree, which he thought would be a Prison, from which she could not make her Escape without Assistance.

I have considered of your Proposal, said he, and if you'll discover the Place, where your Treasure is hid, and allow yourself to be let down into the Hollow of this Tree, 'till I go and find it, I will directly return, and not only take you out of your Prison, but grant you your Life and Liberty. *Bonella*, after requiring many Oaths and Execrations that, upon finding the Treasure, he would come back and perform what he had sworn, told him the Place where it was buried under Ground, and then by his Help got up the Tree, and was let down softly by him to the Bottom. He lost no Time in going to the Place where the Treasure was hid, which he easily found, and that *Bonella* had likewise told him the Truth with Regard to the Value; upon which, wicked as he was, he resolved to return, and not only take her out of her Prison, but make his Escape also, because he was not sure, but *Maximianus* might employ some Means or other to make away with him too. He therefore resolved to return, and tell him that he had

had obeyed his Commands, but to stay no longer in the House, than he had taken what Gold he had in his Chamber.

IN this Resolution, he goes streight to his Master's House where he shews him the Dagger, with which he swore he had pierced *Bonella's* Heart so often that he was sure she would tell no Tales. Very well, replied *Maximanus*, follow me into my Closet, where you shall have the Reward of your Fidelity. In one of the Corners there was a Cupboard, which he ordered him to go and open, and he would find what would make him easy, while he lived. He stept towards it, but all of a sudden the Floor opened, and down drops he two Story high upon sharp Stakes, stuck in the Bottom, which ran through his Body in twenty different Parts all at once, and soon ended his miserable Life.

Maximanus not only secured himself by the Deaths of *Bonella* and his Secretary against Discoveries on their Parts, but gave out, that since they had fled, they were no doubt privy to *Honorio's* Adultery, and afraid of being punished, which had made them take to their Heels.

Heels. *Hortensius* was the next Victim to be sacrificed, but he was to be spared till the Tryal was over, when there would be no farther Occasion for his Service; and the Moment Sentence was pronounced against the Ladies, he was to be dispatched.

AFTER *Hortensius* had signed his Confession in the Council-Chamber, and that *Maximanus* and the rest of the Members there present had attested not only his Confession, but put their Names and Seals to a Sort of Indictment against *Honoraria* and *Amarissa*, wherein every Circumstance of their pretended Crime was narrated as Facts, to which every one whose Name was signed in that Paper had been an Eye-Witness; all which *Maximanus* dispatched by an Express to the Prince, desiring his Commands in what manner he was further to proceed against the Delinquents, whom, in his Letter as well as in the Indictment, he took care to represent as Prostitutes, who were a Scandal to the Sex. He knew the Prince's Delicacy upon this Point, and did not doubt but that his Jealousy would raise his Rage to such a Pitch, that he should have Orders to put them to Death privately, which was what he wanted.

MANV

MANY about Court and in the City began to suspect *Maximianus*, particularly *Corderius*, who publickly took upon him to justify the Ladies against the Accusations, in which he did not doubt but there was some diabolical Mystery, which Providence would bring to Light. He had got some Hints of his Passion for the Princess, and his loading *Hortensius* with Favours and Riches (a Villain he thought, who after his Confession ought to have been thrown into a Dungeon, till he met with the just Punishment of his Crime) seemed very strange to him, and therefore he resolved, as he did not in the least dread *Maximianus's* Power, and was beloved by all honest Men, to form a Party strong enough to protect the Ladies, till such Time as this dark Affair was fully cleared up, and their Guilt, or Innocence, made evident. When *Hortensius* found that *Corderius* openly favoured the Princess, he threw himself in his Way, and as he was passing by him, *If you will follow me*, Sir, said he, *but at such a Distance, that no body may suspect you are going after me, I will tell you strange Things, and you will find that I am not such a Villain as you imagine; and without stopping*
for

his Answer went streight towards the Fields.

Corderius was some Time in a Doubt, whether he should follow him or not, not knowing but there might be some Plot against his Life; but as he was a Man of great Courage, and extremely desirous to make Discoveries in an Affair, about which he had already great Suspicions, he at last resolved, happen what would, to follow *Hortensius*, who went directly towards the Wood on the other Side of the Meadows, where he stopped till *Corderius* came up to him, and when they were got within a few Paces of each other, You ought not to be surpris'd, said *Corderius* to him, that, considering your late Behaviour, I should be under some Apprehension of meeting you in such a Place as this, and that I do not chuse to go into this Wood with a Man who is a Favourite of *Maximianus*, and therefore if you have any thing to communicate to me, I desire you would do it now without Delay. Your Suspicion, answered *Hortensius*, is just, and according to Appearances you and every honest Man must have but a bad Opinion of me, as you are ignorant of the Motives of my Behaviour, which when you know, I hope you will alter your Opi-

nion ; he then recounted every thing, that had passed between *Maximanus* and him, and that he thought it was rendering the Princess *Honorio* better Service to dissemble with *Maximanus*, and to get into his Confidence, that he might, when a favourable Opportunity offered, confound him with his Evidence, than by his Death, to put it out of his Power to do her Justice. *Corderius* had now no more Distrust, but went with him into the Wood, where they resolved that *Hortensius* should set out immediately with a Letter from *Corderius* to the Prince. I will return to Town, said *Corderius*, and send you one of my best Horses, and what Gold you may have Occasion for ; in the mean Time remain you here, and in about an Hour hence, you may expect to have every thing you have Occasion for. *Hortensius* agreed, and so they parted. *Corderius* went home, wrote a Letter to the Prince, and sent it with a Horse and a Purse of Gold to *Hortensius*, who made the best of his way.

Maximanus not seeing *Hortensius* at his Levee, as usual, sent to his House, where his Servants reported, that he had not lain at Home last Night, and that they were afraid some Accident had happened to him. This
made

made him uneasy, but when that the next Day and next Night passed, he then concluded that he was either killed, or had made his Escape; the former would have given him no Trouble, but the latter he dreaded so much, that he resolved not to wait the Prince's Orders about the Prisoners, reflecting within himself, that if he ordered them to be regularly tried, *Corde-rius* and a great many other Noblemen would appear in their Interest, and by their Opposition protract the Tryal: And on the other Hand, if *Hortensius* was gone to the Prince, a thing not at all impossible, he perhaps might order the Tryal to be put off until he returned himself; these Things duly considered made him resolve on altering his Scheme, and instead of bringing the Ladies to a formal Tryal, he intended to have them taken out of the Tower in the dead of Night, and carried to the Wood, where they were to be murdered by two Ruffians hired for that Purpose.

As the Officer who commanded the Guard of the Tower was his Creature, and intirely devoted to his Service, he sent a Servant to let him know that he desired to speak with him immediately. The Order was no sooner

given than obeyed, and the Officer introduced into the Closet where *Maximianus* waited for him, and where he spoke to him in the following Manner.

My dear *Hanno*, said he, you know as well as all *Carthage* how our Prince is dishonoured by this base Woman his Wife, whose Guilt is as clearly evident as the Sun shines ; and yet she and *Amariffa* have had the Art not only to gain *Corderius*, but a great many more Noblemen, and even some of the Council, who were Eye-Witnesses of her Prostitution, and signed their Names to the Accusation ; so that were their Tryal to be carried on in the regular Way, they have a Chance of being acquitted : this I foresaw, when I sent her Indictment to the Prince, at the same Time intimating the Apprehensions I was under from the Strength of her Party, and, giving it as my Advice, since there was no room to doubt of the Facts, that a private Execution would prevent many Disturbances, and perhaps a great deal of Bloodshed, if not a civil War ; and tho' I have not as yet received the Prince's Orders, yet as I know into what a Rage this abominable Woman's Lewdness will throw him, I am so fully persuaded

persuaded, he will agree to my Proposal, that I will venture, at my own Peril, to execute it. As I know your Zeal, added he, to your Prince, and your Attachment to me, I have without any Ceremony communicated my Design to you, not doubting, but you will perform, in this Case, what will contribute to the Satisfaction of our Master, and prevent many dismal Consequences, that I foresee, in case this Affair is not terminated in the manner I propose. All that is required of you is, to deliver the Prisoners to the Person who is the Bearer of this Order, which you are to keep, and which will always excuse you should the Prince happen to disapprove of what I have done. *Hanno* answered that, as he owed the Post he was in to his Generosity, Gratitude called upon him to give a blind Obedience to his Orders, without his giving himself the Trouble of explaining the Reasonableness or Necessity of them, and assured him that every Thing should be done according to his Desire; upon which *Maximianus* pulled off a Diamond-ring he had on his Finger, and gave it him as a Prelude to more valuable Presents, and Preferment which he might expect.

His next Care was to secure two of the most famous Assassins that could be found in *Carthage*, of which there was no Penury, and who made it their constant Trade; he sent for the chief of those Wretches, and told him that he had a Job for him, which would be very advantageous, and attended with no Danger, since it was only two Women, that were to be murdered. Here, said he, is fifty Ducats, giving him a Purse, which is only by way of Earnest, and when the Affair is executed, you shall have double this Sum; but you must get a Comrade to join with you, that each may have one to dispatch. Here is an Order, which you are to give to the Captain of the Guard, about 12 o'Clock this Night, who will deliver the Women, whom you are to conduct to the Wood, and there dispatch, taking Care to bury them so as that their Bodies may not be found, and when all is finished, come to me, and you shall have what I have promised you. The Murderer took the Money and the Order, and assured him, that every thing should be performed according to his Directions; and when he was going out of the Closet, Friend, said *Maximianus*, tell the
Captain

Captain of the Guard, that the Moment you are gone with your Prisoners, he is to come and acquaint me ; so speed you well, and be sure to come streight here with your Friend along with you, when you have completed the Work, that you may receive your Reward ; for I am resolved not to go to bed till after your Return, so be as expeditious as possible.

ABOUT one o'Clock the Captain of the Guard came to give *Maximianus* an Account, that the Women he believed were by this time in another World ; for, added he, they are in the Hands of two Fellows, who will do their Business without Ceremony ; and it gave me Joy to see that the Whores had fallen into so good Hands. Have you the Order I sent you, said *Maximianus* ? Yes, answered he ; here it is : Very well ; keep it for your own Security. Open that Cupboard, said he, in which you will find a small Present, as a Reward for this Night's Service. The unfortunate Wretch, eager to see what he was to have, stept hastily towards the Cupboard ; but of a sudden the Floor opened, and he was plunged into the same Gulf, where the Secretary had ended his Life ; and met with the Punishment of his
Crime

Crime, from the Monster upon whose Account he committed them. He now waited for the Return of the Murderers, whom he intended to reward in the same Manner ; but that Part of his Project did not answer to his Expectation ; and here it seems Heaven thought fit to stop him in his Career of Murder.

HE waited till Day-light for their Return, but to no purpose ; which made him extremely uneasy, not knowing what to think of the Matter. However, he resolved next Day to give out that *Corderius* and his Party had bribed the Captain of the Guards to deliver up the Prisoners, with whom he had made his Escape. By eight o'Clock this News was over all the Town, upon which *Corderius* and his Friends came in a Body well armed to *Maximanus's* House, and told him boldly they suspected he had not only murdered the Prisoners, but sent the Captain of the Guard out of the way, that he might not be a Witness against him. *Maximanus* heard them with great Patience, and just as he was opening his Mouth to speak a Noise was heard upon the Stairs ; upon which *Corderius* and all his Friends drew their Swords, expecting to be attacked, and were resolved, let

let their Fate be what it would, to make sure of *Maximanus*. In the mean time one of his Servants came running in, who told his Master that the Noise was occasioned by a Woman, who pretended she had lost her Husband, and would force her Way into his Presence. Drag her away, cried *Maximanus*. No, no, said *Corderius*; it is your Business, as well as mine and others here, to redress Grievances; let us hear what this Woman has to say: Go, said he to some of his Friends, and conduct her into this Room, which they immediately did. What do you want, good Woman, with *Maximanus*, said *Corderius* upon her entering? I want, said she, to know what he has done with my Husband and my Brother, who left me last Night about twelve o'Clock upon an Affair of Consequence, in which they were employed, as they told me, by his Excellency, and promised to be back in two Hours, but neither of them has as yet appeared, nor can I learn what is become of them? She had scarce said these Words, when a Gentleman of *Corderius's* Party came and told him, that some Country-People brought two dead Bodies from the Woods; one of them a Man with such Clothes, describing them; and the other a Woman,
who

who seemed to have been dead some time. The Woman, who had come to enquire about her Husband, upon hearing the Description of the Man's Dress, gave a loud Shriek, and cried, It is my Husband, and then ran out of the Room as if she had been mad, crying, as she went down the Stairs and in the Street, Where is the Corpse of this dead Man?

I understand, said *Corderius* to *Maximianus*, that you have told several People this Morning I was the Person who had rescued the Prisoners; Is it so or not? I do suspect you, said *Maximianus*: and I you of having hired Ruffians to murder them, answered *Corderius*; and of having either killed or sent the Captain of the Guard out of the way, whom every body knows to be entirely at your Devotion: But this is not a proper Place to discuss such Matters; therefore let a Council be called immediately, where we may explain ourselves fully. By what Authority do you pretend to prescribe to me, said *Maximianus*? Have I not in our Prince's Absence the chief Power vested in me? I will call no Council till I think proper, and that my Master's immediate Service requires it. If that be the Rule you go by,
an-

answered *Corderius*, it never required it more than now ; because either you or I must be Traytors to him ; and as you have already accused me as such by his Reports, I insist upon your confirming in Council what you have said, or acknowledging yourself guilty of a Fault ; and I cannot but think that if you are innocent, you ought to be more desirous of the Council's meeting than I, that you may call upon me to make good what I have just now laid to your Charge. That's right, said *Maximianus*, I had almost forgot that you had charged me with hiring Murderers, we must have a Council, and see how you'll make good that Charge. With that he gave Orders to a Secretary to go the several Members of the Council, and tell them that special Affairs required their meeting directly in the Council-Chamber.

As *Maximianus* was President of the Council, it was moved by *Corderius*, that as the Design of this Meeting was to enquire into the mutual Charges, which the President and he were to bring against one another, it was expedient another of the Members should preside upon this Occasion, which *Maximianus* agreed to

to, and *Berontus* was chosen without Opposition; who, addressing himself to *Maximanus*, desired he would inform the Council of what he had to say against *Corderius*.

He made a long and eloquent Speech, which he began with the Services he had rendered the State during his Ministry, and the Trust reposed in him by his Master, from a thorough Knowledge of his Attachment and Zeal to his Person and Interest. He next went upon the Story of the Princess *Honorio*, of which he narrated all the Circumstances with all the Vehemence and bitter Expressions of one highly provoked at her having escaped the just Punishment of her Crimes; concluding, that it was more than probable *Corderius* and his Party (who had publicly espoused her Quarrel upon all Occasions) were privy if not the Contrivers, to her and *Amarissa*'s Flight, which he did not doubt but he should be able to make appear in due time. In the Interim, added he, I submit it to the Judgment of this august Assembly, whether it may not be for the Service of our Royal Master, that *Corderius* be put under Confinement till this dark Affair be cleared up either to his Conviction
or

or Justification ; which is all I have to say, but that I expect *Corderius* will make good his Assertion, of my having hired Russians to murder Prisoners.

I cannot as yet, answered *Corde rius*, addressing himself to the President, bring absolute Proof of *Maximianus's* being actually concerned in the Murder of the Prisoners, but if he has been the whole and sole Contriver of their pretended Crime, a thing which I undertake to prove, it can be no Breach of Charity to conclude, that none but the Author of such a hellish Contrivance, is guilty of their Murder, and of having taken them out of the Tower, where a Man, whom all here know to be his Creature, commanded. But as I have taken upon me to prove, that the Princess is basely injured, I must beg Leave to repeat what *Hortensius* (who is, I hope, by this time with the Prince) declared upon that Head ; from which this honourable Assembly will, I doubt not, plainly see, that the last Crime is a necessary Consequence of the former : here he repeated every Word of his Conference with *Hortensius*, and concluded that, in his humble Opinion, both *Maximianus* and himself ought directly to be sent to the Tower, and strictly

guarded till the Prince's Pleasure be known : If he is innocent, his Confinement will aggravate my Crime in accusing him unjustly ; and if otherwise, no Punishment can be too rigorous for such an Offender. I am so confident that such a Scene of Horror will soon be brought to light, as no History can parallel ; and I wish I had not too much Reason to suspect, that what he has done, is but a Prelude to still greater Evils ; and therefore I take upon me to affirm, that not only the clearing up of this dark and dismal Scene of Blood and Death calls upon this august Assembly to secure his Person, but likewise the Preservation of the State, no longer safe under his Administration ; for which Reason I do here impeach him, not only as the Author and Contriver of the innocent *Honorio's* Misfortunes, but as a Traytor to his Prince and Country, and am willing to lose my Head, if I don't make my Allegations good and evident to the whole World ; and in saying so he delivered his Sword to the Clerk of the Council, declaring himself a State-Prisoner, desiring *Maximianus* to imitate his Example.

THO' I am as ready to agree to my Confinement, answered *Maximianus*, as this Madman ;

man ; yet as I have the Honour of being entrusted with the Reins of Government in our Master's Absence, I cannot, at present, without betraying his and the Kingdom's Interest, come into this Proposal: Besides, added he, as the Prince will, no doubt, be speedily here himself, it will be time enough then to constitute ourselves Prisoners.

No, no ! cried *Corderius* ; I know the Steps you have already taken towards a Revolt ; and if you are allowed to go home, after what has passed here, if in three Days we do not see Streams of Blood running in our Streets, and a general Massacre of all those who are not of your Party, in that case I will give every Mortal liberty to treat me as an Incendiary and a Madman ; but I hope the Wisdom of this Assembly will prevent such fatal Events, by sending us both directly to the Tower ; and if they should not, I shall at least have this Comfort, that I have done my Duty.

THE Council then ordered they should both retire to another Room while they were deliberating, which they did ; and *Maximianus* calling for Paper, Pen, and Ink, with an In-

D d 2

tention

tention to write a Line to be sent by his Servant, was told by *Corderius*, that if he wrote any Letter, it should not be sent till the Council saw it, upon which he dropt his Design.

THERE were long and strong Debates in Council; and when it was put to the Vote, Confinement or not, it carried in the Affirmative; upon which a Messenger was sent directly, before the Prisoners were called to the Council-Chamber, for a strong Party of the Guards to conduct them to the Tower; and *Berontius*, a Man of Integrity, was appointed by the Council to take the Administration upon him, till the Prince's Arrival, to whom he was immediately to dispatch an Express with a full Account of what had been done.

Maximianus, upon hearing what the Council had determined, was mad with Rage and Despair, and *Corderius* rejoiced that Heaven had inspired them with the only means of preserving the State, as well as discovering the horrid Deeds of this abominable Man. He thanked the Members for their just Sentence, adding that

that as he desired no Communication, by Letters or personally, with any of his Friends, he hoped *Maximanus* would be under the same Restriction, and such strong Guards put upon them both that all Attempts of Escape might be prevented. They were immediately delivered in Charge to the high Constable of the Tower escorted by a strong Guard. As they were going to the Place of their Confinement, the Woman, whose Husband had been brought from the Wood where he had been found dead, came crying that *Maximanus* had sent her Husband and Brother to be murdered, and that she hoped he would be tried for that as well as other things.

As a great many People belonging to the Court, Men and Women, went to see the dead Woman, imagining that it might be *Honorio* or *Amarissa*, among the rest one of *Honorio*'s Waiting-Maids, who no sooner saw the Corps than, by the Clothes more than the Face, she cried out that it was *Bonella*, whom the People, who brought the Corpse from the Wood, had found, by the means of a Dog, in the Trunk of an old Tree ; this was a new Subject of Conversation and Wonder to the

whole Town, and rather augmented than cleared up the late mysterious Transactions, of which every body judged as they were affected.

BUT this hidden Scene of Villany was soon to be brought to Light, and the Traytor *Maximianus* convicted, not only by the Evidences of others, but by his own Confession; without which the tragical Ends of *Benella*, his own Secretary, and the Captain of the Guard might have for ever remained a Secret; as for the Manner of the Ruffian's Death who had undertaken to murder *Honorio* (about which *Maximianus* was as ignorant as other People), it was discovered by *Honorio*, *Amariffa* and the Person who had killed him.

IN a few Days after the Confinement of *Maximianus* and *Corderius*, the Prince arrived at *Carthage* with *Hortensius*, and as he had always placed great Confidence in his Favourite, he was loath to believe him capable of such Things as the Gardener laid to his Charge, and greatly surprised when he was informed of the Council's Proceeding, which he, however, approved of, considering how confidently
Cor-

Corderius, whom he knew to be a Man of great Honour and Virtue, had accused *Maximanus* of treasonable Practices, as well as being guilty of contriving *Honorio's* Misfortune, which, as he passionately loved her, sunk deeper in his Heart than the Loss of his Crown.

THE Prince could not come to any Resolution upon this strange Affair ; on the one hand, it was very evident that the Gardener had been found naked in *Honorio's* Bed, which he did not deny, but asserted that he never had such a Design, nor could tell which Way or how he came there ; on the other Hand, *Maximanus's* threatening to kill him, if he did not accuse the Ladies, and loading him with Favours upon his complying with his Proposals, seemed to render his Conduct very mysterious and suspicious ; and this joined to the heavy Accusations which *Corderius*, with so much Confidence, brought against him, augmented the Prince's Perplexity, and made him resolve to leave Things as they were, at least for some Time, hoping that Providence would, some how or other, bring about a Discovery ;
in

in the mean Time he thought proper to commit *Hortensius* to the Tower.

THINGS remained in this doubtful Situation about two Months, and when the Prince had almost lost Hopes of ever coming to the Knowledge of *Honorio* and *Amarissa's* Fates, a Ship arrived from *Majorca* dispatched by *Castriot* *Amarissa's* Uncle, and Governor of the Island, with a Letter to the Prince, which was directed to his Royal Highness the Prince of *Carthage*, and if I rightly remember contained the following Words.

Sir,

HONORIO and *Amarissa* are both living and well, notwithstanding the Attempts of that bloody Monster *Maximianus*, who to be revenged of *Honorio* for rejecting his amorous Addresses, first contrived to ruin her and *Amarissa's* Reputations, and at last resolved to have them murdered: They were preserved by *Navigius* whom I have sent in this Ship to be an Evidence against that bloody Wretch *Maximianus*. He will inform your Royal Highness how his Brother-in-Law

Law and he were employed by your Minister to kill them, and by what means they were preserved. It is, I believe, needless to expect a Confession from a Man who is capable of such Crimes without Racks and Tortures, and I don't know but, rather than acknowledge the unheard of Cruelties of which I believe him guilty, he will suffer all the Torments that can be contrived; however, I think there are Presumptions strong enough to authorise his being put to the severest of Tryals, which is all I shall add, but that I am with profound Respect,

Sir,

Your Royal Highness's

Most devoted humble Servant,

CASTRIOT,

Governor of Majorca.

The Prince upon receiving this Letter immediately called a Council, and ordered *Maximianus* to be brought from the Tower, that he might be present when *Navigius* was interrogated; this Task the Prince took upon him-

himself, and, after administering a very solemn Oath to *Navigius*, ordered him to declare all that he knew about *Honorio* and *Amarissa*. *Navigius* began thus: I am a Sea-man by Profession and Master of a small Vessel: I happened to be here about ten Weeks ago, and having a Sister married to a *Carthaginian*, I lay at his House: My Brother-in-Law, *Thoron* by Name, took me aside one Evening, and told me that if I would assist him in a Job which *Maximianus* had employed him in, I would rather, said he, you should have the Advantage of it than another. I asked him what it was? Only, answered he, to cut two Womens Throats who deserve to be publicly executed, but whom, for Reasons of State, he resolves to have privately put to death. Tho' I was not very fond of such Employments, yet the Temptation of Twenty Ducats, which he promised me, prevailed; accordingly I agreed to be his Assistant. About twelve o'clock that Night we went to the Tower, where the Captain of the Guard delivered two Women to us, whom we conducted to the Wood with an Intention to put them to death; but they both appeared so beautiful, and spoke so well, that my Heart relented, and I endeavoured

voured to prevail on my Brother to allow me to carry them off in my Ship, assuring him that I could sell them for more Money than he was to get for murdering them ; but nothing would satisfy him but their Death, upon which he drew his Sword with a Design to go about it. I begged of him to desist, and at last, drawing my Sword, told him plainly that I would not allow him to kill them. As he was a daring resolute Man, he swore that if I pretended to defend them, he would first kill me and then them ; upon this we fell a fighting, and I believe I should have been worsted, had not one of the Ladies taken off her Scarf, and, after rolling it up, thrown it into *Thoron's* Face, by which means a Thrust I made at him went quite through his Body, and he dropt down dead at my Feet ; upon which we made the best of our Way to my Vessel, and, the Wind being fair, directly set Sail for *Majorca*, where the Ladies now are in perfect good Health, and treated like Queens by our Governor, who told me that I had, by my preserving their Lives, rendered your Highness a Service for which I would be rewarded ; and so you shall, Friend, said the Prince, beyond your
Ex-

Expectation, ordering him to retire till the Council was up.

FOR some Time the Prince seemed to be in a deep Thought, at last turning to *Maximanns*, Tho' I have all the Inclination in the World, said he, to believe you incapable of what is laid to your Charge, and could wish it were so, yet there are so many concurring Testimonies, some positive, as that of *Hortensius* who flatly accuses you of having first threatened him, and, when that would not do, tempted him with advantageous Offers, upon condition that he would charge the Princess with a Crime of which both she and he were innocent, and which, he says, nothing could have induced him to do, but the Prospect of appearing afterwards as an Evidence against you, by which he rendered her more Service than by his Death which must have happened, had he not seemingly complied with your Proposals; on the other hand, you see by what *Navigius* has declared upon Oath, that you had hired his Brother-in-Law to murder the Ladies; these Circumstances, not to mention the heavy Charge brought against you by *Corderius*, a Man famous for his Probity and Honour, are such

such strong Presumptions, that I am almost now convinced you are guilty, and I give you till to-morrow at this Hour to consider, whether by a voluntary Confession you will throw your self upon my Mercy, or stand the Tortures of the Rack, which you must expect. I find, said *Maximanus*, that the Storm comes on apace; that my Enemies will conquer, and that all my former Services are forgot; but I am prepared to meet my fate. The loss of Life gives me no great pain, but the thoughts of being over-reached by such a Dunce as *Corderius* are worse than Death, which is all I have to say, but that my Folly meets with the Punishment it deserves.

NEXT Morning he petitioned the Prince for Allowance to make his Will, and that a Notary-Publick (whom he named, and whom he had constantly employed during his Ministry) might be allowed to come to him, and that a Delay of Racks and Tortures might be granted, till such Time as he had settled his worldly Affairs; which the Prince readily granted. When the Notary came, my Friend, said he, I have sent for you on Pretence of making my Will, but the real Business is that you may render me

a Service of far greater Consequence, for which I will leave you a considerable Legacy. My Enemies have got the Start of me, and it will be no small Addition to their Triumph to see me exposed to the Indignities of Racks and Tortures; and therefore as the last and greatest Service that one Friend is capable of rendering to another, I must beg you will procure me a Poison that will have its Effect in an Hour after it enters the Body; this Service I expect from your Friendship, and that you may have a Pretence for returning once more to this Place, here's a Memorandum of my Will which you are to put in Form, and bring along with you, in order to have it signed by me; but be sure not to leave behind you the only Comfort that this World can now afford me; my Surgeon will make up the proper Dose, for which I desire you will give him a hundred Ducats, after I am dead and gone. The Notary finding that he was to have a considerable Legacy, and not being troubled with a scrupulous Conscience, made no Words about the Matter, but readily undertook the Affair, and, in going out, he shewed the Memorandum to the Captain of the Guard, telling him that in an Hour he would return with
the

the Will extended in Form, which he accordingly did, not forgetting the Poison prepared according to Direction. *Maximianus* upon receiving it embraced him: In any other Situation but mine, said he, this would be a melancholy Present, but it is acceptable now, as the only means of disappointing the Expectation of my Enemies, who flattered themselves with the Pleasure of seeing me treated as the meanest Malefactor: Let me now sign my Will, continued he, and when you are certain of my Death, give the Prince this sealed Paper, but not till then. Farewel, my Friend, the Hour of my being put to the Rack approaches, and I have no Time to lose; think sometimes of the unhappy *Maximianus*, whom an ungovernable Passion has brought to this untimely End, which, tho' shocking, exempts me from the Scorn and Insults of my Enemies, and makes me look on this bitter Dose as the only Cordial fit for a Man in my Condition. Retire, for I would neither have my Friends nor Foes to see me go thro' an Operation the more painful, as the Poison will have a vigorous healthful Constitution to combat with: But I don't consider that Time is precious.

He then poured the Liquid into a Glass and swallowed it directly, and taking the Notary by the Hand, a last Farewel my Friend ; I am now near the End of my Career ; begone ——— remember my Directions ——— the Dose begins to work ——— my Heart starts ——— the Venom mixes with the Mass of Blood ——— my Stomach swells ——— it rolls within my Breast ——— it burns ——— it burns ——— and with such Force as *Ætna's* bursting Flame ; it throws the fiery Vapours to my Head ——— wild Chimeras run through my Brain ——— ugly Phantoms dance before my Eyes ——— fly, fly, before the last convulsive Shock destroys my torturing Frame. By this time the Notary was so much frightened, that without much pressing he left this dismal Place, and when the Executioner came to conduct the Prisoner to the torturing Room, he found him dead on the Floor with his Head quite turned round, so that his Face was towards his Back, and his Body swelled to a monstrous Bigness.

THE News was soon spread abroad, and the Prince seemed to be pleased rather than displeased that he had poisoned himself. The
Notary

Notary considered with himself that if he delivered the sealed Paper which *Maximianus* had given him, he might perhaps be accused of having procured him the Poison, and therefore he thought proper to drop it in a Place where it was immediately found and carried to the Prince, in which he read the following Words.

I Loved Honoria, she rejected my Passion with a scornful Contempt ; this inspired me with Revenge : I bribed her Maid Bonella, who gave her and Amariffa a sleepy Doze : My Secretary, by my Orders, did to Hortensius, what Bonella had done to the Ladies ; and he was laid between them. To prevent Discoveries, my Secretary murdered Bonella in the Wood, and upon his Return, I made sure of him, by the means of a Trap in my Closet, from whence he fell two Story high into a Vault, where his Body now lies, pierced through and through with pointed Iron Stakes, and where also will be found the Body of the Captain of the Guard, who delivered Honoria and Amariffa, upon my written Order, to two Ruffians, whom I hired to murder them in the Wood ; and who had they returned would have been rewarded

as the other Ministers of my Rage and Cruelty: Hortensius was to have added to the Number of my Victims, had he not taken Corderius's Advice in going to your Highness. You may look upon this tragical Scene as a Prelude only to still greater Evils: As I had dipt my Hands in Blood, I was resolved to crown my Work by yours, and to usurp your Throne: But Fate has stopped my Career, and forced me to leave the Work undone.

Maximianus.

THE first thing the Prince did, was to sign an Order for the Releasement of *Corderius* and *Hortensius*; the former he called his tutelary Angel, and loaded him with Honours and Riches; and the latter was not forgot; his next Care was to order Ships to be fitted out directly, for bringing from *Majorca* the Princess *Honorio* and *Amarissa*; and it may be imagined, the Governor had Presents sent him of no small Value. In about a Month the Ladies arrived safe at *Carthage*, where I will leave them enjoying a Calm, after so many boisterous Storms, from which they had been miraculously delivered; and I look upon the Conclusion of this Story, as a Deliverance to myself, since I must
own

own, that I had no Pleasure in going through such a Series of Horrors ; nor I believe you, Ladies, in hearing them repeated. Here the Curate left of speaking ; and Madam *Nancini* said that, of all the Passions, to which human Nature was subject, she believed Love was the most dangerous, when it met with Obstacles ; but, continued she, were it not a Piece of Cruelty, after so long a Discourse, I would desire you, Sir, to favour us with your Sentiments of the Passions in general, for 'tis very possible, I may have mistaken Notions of them. As I have had a breathing time, Madam, replied he, and can, at a very small Expence of Words, tell you what occurs to me at present upon this Subject, I shall obey you.

PASSION, said he, is applied to the different Motions and Agitations of the Soul, according to the different Objects that present themselves to the Senses. In Propriety, all those Motions whereby the Soul is carried towards any thing, as Love, Ambition, Revenge, &c. are rather Actions than Passions. We find various Modifications and Impressions of Pleasure and Pain inseparably annexed, by an established Law of Nature, to the several Judgments we form concerning

cerning Good and Evil : These Judgments with their respective Modifications of Pleasure or Pain, according to the various Appearances and Relations of the Object considered, either as good or evil, present or absent, certain or uncertain, probable or improbable, possible or impossible, and affecting the Machine in a certain manner peculiar to such Modifications, make what we call the Passions: How, or by what means, this mutual Action and Communication between Soul and Body is effected, we are, in a great Measure, ignorant ; we have but very obscure and faint Notions of any thing prior, or more simple, to resolve it into, except the immediate Will and Agency of the first Cause itself.

PHILOSOPHERS are not agreed about the Number and Division of the Passions ; the ordinary Distribution is into Passions of the *Concupiscible Appetite*, which are Pleasure and Pain, Desire and Aversion, Love and Hatred ; and those of the *Irascible Appetite*, which are Anger, Courage, Fear, Hope and Despair.

A CERTAIN famous Physician considers the *Passions*, as either spiritual or animal.—Spiritual
tual

tual Passions, he defines to be those Sentiments produced in the Soul by external Objects, either spiritual ones, immediately, or material ones, by the Organs of the Body.—Animal Passions he defines to be those Effects produced by Spirits or Bodies immediately on the Body.——

Hence, as outward Objects may be considered as Goods or Evils; the most natural Division of the Passions, whether spiritual or natural, as they regard those Objects, is into *pleasurable* and *painful*.——And in this Sense, all the Passions may be reduced to Love and Hatred; but perhaps to one, Love; and even that may be all resolved into Self-Love; and this into a Principle of Self-Preservation, or necessary invincible Desire of Pleasure or Happiness.——

The rest are only Rivulets from this Source; or special Applications of this Principle to particular Occasions.

Thus, the Desire of any thing under the Appearance of its Goodness, Suitableness, or Necessity to our Happiness, constitutes the Passion of Love; the Desire of avoiding any thing apprehended to be mischievous, hurtful, or destructive, constitutes Hatred or Aversion; the Desire of a good which appears at the same time

time probable, and in our Power, constitutes Hope; but if the good appear improbable, difficult, or impossible, it constitutes Fear, or Despair; the unexpected Gratification of Desire is Joy; the Desire of Happiness to another under Pain, or Suffering, is Compassion; and the Desire of another's Punishment, Revenge and Malice, &c.——The single Desire of Happiness then, is the Spring and Motive of all our Passions; as those are of all our Actions. Some wise and reasonable Motive, or End of Action, says a christian learned Doctor, is certainly necessary to all wise and reasonable Actions; to act without a Motive, would be the same thing as not to act at all; that is, such an Action could answer no farther or better End, than not acting; and consequently the Action, as well as the Agent, would be so far insignificant and useless. He who should have no Object at all of his Love or Aversion, Hope or Fear, Joy or Grief, must be simply and purely indifferent to all Action; and, consequently, must either be in a State of perfect Rest and Inaction, or in a State equivalent thereto; wherein the Action of such a Being, could be of no more Significancy, than the uncertain Fluctuation of an Atom,

Atom, or the quivering of a Feather in the Air.

THE natural or occasional Cause of all the Passions, a certain Author makes to be the Motion of the animal Spirits, which are diffused through the Body, to produce and preserve a Disposition therein suitable to the Object perceived ; to the End, that the Body and Mind may mutually assist each other on this Occasion ; it being the Order of the Creator, that our Wills be followed by Motions of the Body proper to execute them ; and that the Motions of the Body, mechanically excited in us, by the View of external Objects, be accompanied with a Passion of the Soul, which inclines to will, or not to will, what appears serviceable, or noxious to the Body.

IT is a continual Impression of the Will of the Creator, that unites us thus intimately to a Piece of Matter, and occasions this Reciprocation of Motions and Sensations ; were this Impression of the Creator's Will suspended a Moment, we should be delivered from all Dependence, all Passions, &c. For what People usually imagine of a necessary Connexion
between

Between the Motions of the Spirits and Blood, and the Emotions of the Soul is inconceivable.——So me Authors have imagined, that certain little Parts of the Bile, move with some Violence among the Fibres of the Brain; therefore the Soul must necessarily be agitated with some Passion, and this Passion must be Anger rather than Love. What Relation can we conceive between a Passion of Contempt or Hatred, and a bodily Motion of the Parts of the Blood striking against certain Parts of the Brain? How can the Union or Alliance of two things so different, as Spirit and Matter, be effected, but by the Omnipotent Will of the Author of Nature?

It is a Point about which the Divines and Philosophers can never agree; whether this Relation and Connexion of Thoughts of the Mind, and Motions of the Body, be the Gift of Nature, or the Punishment of the first Sin? And whether the Passions be the Institution of Nature, or the Corruption thereof? Indeed, considering the good and wise Purposes the Passions serve, and that absolute Necessity they are of, it is surprizing it should ever be

be doubted, that they are essential to human Nature.

THIS Union or Relation is found in all Men, but in different Degrees, and of different Extent ; according to the different Temperaments, Conditions, Ages, Sexes, Occasions, Objects, &c. Thus, for Instance, our Union or Relation to sensible Objects we have seen, is stronger than that to Things we have only heard talk of. And thus, as the great have a Relation to many more things than others, their Slavery is more extensive ; the Desire of being esteemed by all, in whose Sight they frequently are, oblige them to sacrifice more reasonable Pleasures ; and thus Vanity animates Virtue ; otherwise we should never see great Men submit to such Condescensions. In every Passion there may be seven Things distinguished : The first, the Judgment the Mind makes of an Object, or the View of this Relation the Object bears to us. The second, a new Determination of the Will towards that Object, supposing it to appear as good. The third, the peculiar Sensation or Modification which accompanies them : As the Sensation of Love, Hatred, Desire or Joy ; which Sensations are always different in the different Passions,

sions, and, as it were, the different Characteristicks thereof. The fourth, a new Determination of the Course of the Blood and Spirits towards the several Parts of the Body; before the Sight of the Object of the Passion, the animal Spirits were pretty equally diffused throughout the Body; but the Presence of the new Object disturbs the whole Œconomy, and the greatest Part of the Spirits is sent into the Muscles of the Arms, Legs, Face, &c. The fifth, is the sensible Emotion of the Soul, which finds itself shaken by this sudden overflowing of Spirits. The sixth, is the different Sensation of Love, Hatred, &c. caused, not by the intellectual View of Good or Evil, but by the different Shakes or Movements the animal Spirits occasion in the Brain. The last, is a certain Sensation of Joy, or inward Satisfaction, which detains the Soul in its Passion, and attests its being in the State it ought to be, with Regard to that Object. In strictness, said he, I ought to enlarge upon every one of these Particulars, but that would take up too much Time: I shall, at another Occasion, when you are in the Humour of renewing the Conversation upon this Subject, endeavour to illustrate the several Distinctions in every Passion, and shall now conclude

conclude with an Observation or two on the Passions, in a View to Medecine, as they make one of what Physicians call the six Non-naturals of the utmost Consequence with Respect to Health or Disease.

IN Consequence of the several Judgment, we form concerning Objects, as either Good or Evil, the Organs of Sensation or Motion, that is, the nervous Fibres are variously impressed or stimulated; whence arise certain Sensations, and certain Modifications of Motion, which, as is apparent, are reciprocal, and follow mutually to each other, whether the Impression be supposed first made on the Body, or on the Mind; that is, any strong violent Motion made on the Organs, will excite a painful Sensation in the Mind; or any such painful Sensation first excited in the Mind, from the bare Consideration of an Object, will impress a violent Motion on the Organs. And, on the contrary, an easy and placid Undulation, impressed originally by the actual Impulse of Object, will excite a pleasurable Sensation in the Mind; or a pleasurable Sensation excited in the Mind, from the mere Contemplation of an Object, will be followed with a like easy placid Undulation or Motion of the Organs.

THE painful Passions, then, as well as bodily Pain, impress the nervous Fibres with a violent Motion; which brings them alternately into forcible Contractions and Dilatations, or strengthens and increases their muscular Force and Action. While then this Pain, or Uneasiness of Desire, annexed to the Passions, and impressed on the Nerves, is moderate and restrained within the Bounds of Nature, such stimulating Desires have a good Effect; as they strengthen muscular Motion, keep up the Circulation of the Blood, promote the natural Secretions, and excite a Man to such Actions and Exercises, wherein animal Life, Health and Vigour consist. But where the Uneasiness annexed to the Passion is too violent, such a continual Stimulus will gradually derive a too great Proportion of Blood to the stimulated Organs, by which the Vessels will be overstretched and distended, their muscular Force gradually impaired, and the Equilibrium of the Blood and Juices be interrupted. And hence, from such a mere painful Sensation, will arise a complicated Train of bodily Illnesses and Pains, in Consequence of the established Laws of the Union and Communication of Soul and Body.

AGAIN

AGAIN, while we are wearing off the Uneasiness of Desire annexed to any Passion, we feel a sensible Pleasure, or agreeable Emotion; and the Organs hereupon falling into easy, uniform, placid Undulations, the too great Current of the Blood toward them is diverted, and the Equilibrium restored. As soon as the Uneasiness is all gone, the Pleasure ceases and terminates into Indolence, which disposes the Person to Rest and Inaction; till the Return of some fresh Desire, stimulating to farther Action, renews the same Succession, and interchangeable Series of Pains and Pleasure.——And this is the Circle of animal Life; as the Stimulus of Desire throws off the Indolence of Rest, and excites to Action; so the Gratification moderates the Pain of Desire, creates a Pleasure at first, and then terminates in the former Indolence and Inaction; till fresh Desires returning, stimulate to farther Action, and continue the same round.

HERE the good Curate ended his Discourse on the Passions; and addressing himself to the Lady of the House, we must refer the Application of these general Topicks, to another Occasion, because I am now obliged to go Home;

where I expect a Visit from a very extraordinary Man, who pretends, by certain Prayers and Invocations, that a pious Man may both see and converse with any of the nine Orders or Hierarchies of Angels, and be resolved by the appearing Angel of what Questions he proposes, provided they be not Secrets, which God Almighty has not thought fit to reveal even to those celestial Creatures ; he is to shew me his Directory, and assures me, that in repeating certain Prayers, with Sincerity and Devotion, the Angel invoked will appear, or some other deputed by the supreme Being, and fully qualified to answer such Questions as may be solved. But, dear Sir, cried Madam *Nancini*, have you any Notion that such Things are possible ? For my Part, added she, as I give no Credit to the many Stories that are told of Apparitions, I should be much obliged to your Magician, or what you please to call him, if he would shew me what would cure my Infidelity ; but as I have not attained to that elevated Degree of Virtue and Piety, which qualifies one for such a Vision ; and as I know you to be a Man of Veracity, if you assure me that the thing is real, I will believe it. The next Time I have the Pleasure of seeing you, Madam, answered the Curate, I shall
tell

tell you my Opinion of those things, as well as of this Man, with whom I am to have a Conference upon the Subject of Apparitions.

HERE the Conversation was broke off by the Arrival of a neighbouring Gentleman, who, after the first Compliments, asked the Curate and Madam *Nancini*, if they had any News from *Naples*, and if they had heard of the Governour's Death? This Question startled all the Company, and particularly me. We have heard nothing of it, said Madam *Nancini* hastily, and you'll oblige us to let us know the Circumstances. My Servant, said he, was at *Naples* yesterday, and he tells me that the whole City was in a great Confusion, upon the sudden Death of the Governor, about two o'Clock, who died, as was reported, in an Apoplectick Fit in three Minutes time, and I came here on purpose to know if you had heard of it. About two Hours after, a Servant of Mrs. *Bolini*'s came with a Letter to her Sister, confirming the News of the Governor's Death, and adding, that his Breath was scarce out, when several large Demands had been made on the *French Consul* by Madam *de Maricalta*'s Creditors, who, not in a Condition to satisfy them, had disappeared, and his Wife had left his

his House, which, with all the Furniture and Plate, had been seized by the Creditors.

As I had nothing now that obliged me to conceal my self, I made no Scruple of speaking my Mind, and therefore addressing myself to Madam Nancini: As I have nothing now, Madam, said I, to be afraid of at *Naples*, I have no Occasion to be further troublesome to you; besides, Duty calls upon me to go and see what is become of my poor unhappy Father, that I may assist him not only personally, but with what little Effects I have, in Case he should have Occasion for them. Tho' I shall be very sorry, my dear Miss, said she, to lose the Pleasure of your Company, yet I will always consent to what is most agreeable to you, and therefore when you think proper to return, my Chaise shall conduct you. I thanked her, and said, that if it was convenient for her, I would set out the next Morning early.

It would be cruel in me, said I to *Mirella*, when we were by our selves, to propose your going along with me to *Naples*, upon the Uncertainty I am under of my Father's Situation, and whether I must not strip myself of every Thing for his Support; and what is still a stronger Argument

Argument against my pleasing myself with any such Thought is, that, by following my uncertain Fortune, you risk the losing of Madam *Nancini's* Protection ; she seems now to have such a Friendship for you, that she will, not only, with Pleasure, provide for you while she lives, but likewise put you in a way to do for your self after her Death : When I consider these Advantages, they plainly tell me, that I must be your Enemy, if I don't persuade you to embrace them. I don't know, answered she, with a visible Concern in her Countenance, but that, as you observe, it may be my Interest to remain with my Aunt, if she will be so good as to keep me ; but I am very certain that it will be a very great Grief to me to stay here, after you are gone ; and that I would much rather take my Chance with you, than to have a Certainty where I am ; and, therefore, if no other Consideration but my Advantage determines you to part with me, I beg that may be no Obstacle ; for I find my Heart so attached to you, that I should think myself happier with you in the most reduced State, than with my Aunt in the Enjoyment of Plenty, and every thing that makes Life agreeable ; and supposing you are obliged to give up your Jewels, we still have our Fingers, which no body can
take

take from us ; and we will make such Use of them, in the manner proposed formerly when we were upon this Subject, that we shall not want the Necessaries of Life ; and that, with Contentment, is the utmost of my Ambition ; and, therefore, if you are not afraid of my being a Charge upon you, and from that Apprehension are influenced to leave me here, let no other Consideration of Advantage to me, prevail with you to deprive me of a Happiness, which I value above all Prospects from my Aunt's Generosity. I told you from the Beginning, that my Heart was attached to you in a particular manner ; this Attachment, from a better Knowledge of your Merit, is become so strong, and so deeply rooted in my Heart, that to be deprived, at once, of what I think my Happiness, would make me miserable in the midst of present Plenty in this House, and an agreeable Prospect of a future happy Situation from my Aunt's Benevolence : for Heaven's sake, Madam, added she, and the Tear came trickling down her Cheek, permit me to devote my whole Life to your Service, unless you are resolved to render me wretched, or that I am become disagreeable to you ; in which Case, indeed, I must, if I have that Regard
for

for you which I profess, I say I must and will drop my Request, and rather make myself unhappy, than give you the least Uneasiness. I was so moved with her friendly and generous Attachment to me, that, with Tears in my Eyes, I got her in my Arms, and told her that nothing, but the Consideration of her Advantage, had prevailed with me to mention a Separation, which Honour, I thought, as well as Friendship, made a Duty so binding on me, that I could not hearken to the Motions of my Heart, or what flatter'd my own Desires; adding, that if she knew what a Struggle I had gone through, to bring myself to such a cruel Resolution, she would plainly see, that I had sacrificed my own Satisfaction to her Advantage; but, continued I, as I have done what I thought incumbent upon me, as a sincere Friend, and as I find that my Proposal is not agreeable to you, I am at Liberty to accept of your generous Offer; and, at the same Time, to let you know that nothing on Earth can give me more Pleasure, than to find that you are as loath to part with me, as I am to lose you: Let us therefore, my dear *Mirella*, think no more of Separations, and as Friendship has linked our Hearts, let us take our
Chance

Chance together, and wrestle through the Labyrinths of Life the best way we can. As our Intentions are virtuous and innocent, Providence will, I hope, provide for us. Joy sparkled in her Eyes, and she cryed with a Vivacity, which like a Torrent rushed from a raptur'd Heart, *You now love me, I see it, my Happiness is compleat.*

NEXT Morning we got up pretty early to prepare for our Journey, and when we were at Breakfast, Madam Nancini seemed to be under a great Concern for my leaving her. Tho' I cannot, my dear Miss, said she, in Justice condemn your Resolution of going to *Naples*, nor pretend to dissuade you from it, as the Motive of this Journey, is to know what is become of your Father; it is a Duty so indispensable, that I shall not take upon me to offer any thing in Opposition to it; but if it should happen, that, after you have made Enquiry about him, you neither can see, nor hear of him; in that Case, I hope, you will oblige me with your Company, and return with a Design to make this House the Place of your Retreat, till your Father has made up Matters, or is settled in some other Part of
the

the World ; though you will not have here all the Amusements which you may find at *Naples*, yet as you seem not to have any Dislike to the innocent retired Life we lead, you will, by coming back, be exempted from the Persecutions which a young Lady of your Youth and Beauty must be exposed to, if she appears in publick Places ; the Men of Gallantry, let a Woman be ever so circumspect and cautious, will, some how or other, find means to get Access to her Company ; and though all their Stratagems and Arts may not be able to seduce her Virtue, yet as there have been Instances of Men's having, out of Revenge for Disappointments, boasted of Favours they never had, with a View to destroy a Woman's Reputation, who would not comply with their base Desire, every Woman of Prudence, and who has any Regard to her Reputation, ought to bar the Door against all such dangerous Intruders, and avoid their Company as she would a Madman with a drawn Sword in his Hand. Then turning to her Niece, *Mirella*, said she, though I had resolved that you should remain with me as long as I lived, or till you was married, yet as I know your Attachment to Miss *Tencin* to be so strong, that to part with

her would make you unhappy and her uneasy, I consent, if it be her and your Desire, that you go along with her, and remain about her as long as you can be serviceable to her, and you shall, at all Times, be welcome to me. *Mirella* fell upon her Knees, and catching hold of one of her Aunt's Hands, kissed it with rapturous Fondness, but could not for some time pronounce one single Word; the Tears that dropt from her Eyes expressed what she felt in her Heart better than what she could have said. When the first Shocks of a tumultuous Joy, with which she was confounded, were over, she thanked her Aunt, and told her, that she had judged right of her Sentiments with respect to me, with whom she could not part without making herself unhappy; for my part, I spoke in such a manner as made *Madam Nancini* know that I was no less attached to *Mirella*, than she was to me.

AFTER Breakfast, and bidding a last Farewel to this good Lady, a Ceremony that was not a little moving, we set out, taking *Mrs. Bolini's* House, where we dined, in our Way to *Naples*, and arrived safe at *Mirella's* Aunt's, where

where I had resolv'd to take up my Lodging, till I was otherwise provided. My first Visit, next Morning, was to Madam *D'Allon* the Nun, whom I was mighty impatient to see; and when I appeared at the Grate, Good God, cried she, is it you, my dear Child! and am I so happy as to see you once more! where have you been? and how did you manage to give your Enemies the Slip? but why, you cruel Creature, added she, did you not let me hear from you? since, if you are persuaded of my Friendship, you must have imagined that I was extremely uneasy about you! I came to Town, Madam, said I, only last Night, and my first Care was to come and pay my Respects here; and at the same time, to inform you of my Adventures since I last saw you, and to beg the Favour of your Advice for my future Conduct. I then related every Particular of what had happened to me; by which, Madam said I, you see that I durst not venture to write, at least till the Heat of the Search was over, and that they had lost all Hopes of finding me out, and when I was thinking of sending you in Writing what I have now told you, we received News of the Governor's Death, which determin'd me to

return, principally with a Design to enquire about my Father, and to render him all the Service in my Power. — Alas! said she sighing, 'tis not in your Power to remedy his Misfortunes; he is gone, I am told, for *Venice*, from whence he is to embark for *Marseilles* in *France*; his Wife's Creditors have seized on every thing belonging to him, and all his visible Effects here will not, when sold, pay one third of her Debts; she is retired to her Country House, despised and abhorred by every honest Man and Woman in Town, upon your Account, as well as her Husband's, and has not, I am told, appeared at *Naples* since this Catastrophe. Ah! cried I, weeping, what will become of my poor Father! and how unhappy am I to have these Jewels, which would be of so great Use to him, now that he perhaps wants the Necessaries of Life! the very Thoughts distract my Brain, and make me stupid! for Heaven's sake, Madam, advise me which Way I shall get them conveyed to him, with a Letter to know whether he will allow me to follow him, or if I am to remain here. Make yourself easy, Child said she, about your Father, who cannot be in the Distress your frightened Imagination represents.

presents him; he was a Man of great Trade and Correspondence in foreign Countries, where, to be sure, he must have considerable Effects, since nothing was found here by his Wife's Creditors, but about 3000 Crowns in Money, and his Household Furniture, and that cannot be supposed to be his whole Stock; so that you need be under no Concern, upon his wanting wherewithal to subsist him; but were that even the Case, and if we knew how to find him at *Venice*, I cannot think of any safe Way to transmit the Jewels to him; besides, it is not to be imagined he will make any Stay there, but hasten to *France*, to secure the Effects he has in that Kingdom, and to prevent his Wife's Creditors from laying their Hands upon them; so that my Advice to you is, to remain peaceably here, till such time as some one or other of your Father's Friends hear from him, which, no doubt, will soon happen: As the Jewels, continued she, are undoubtedly your own Property, no body can blame you to make use of them for your Subsistence, since your Father has abandoned you; and though I should be overjoyed to have you in this Convent as a Boarder, yet as your small Stock would soon be consumed in that Way

of going on, I think *Mirella's* Project preferable; and I am confident, considering the great Character you have acquired by your noble Behaviour, all the virtuous Ladies of *Naples*, when they know that you are industriously employed, not only to procure a Livelyhood for your self, but likewise to pay a young Sister's Board in this Convent, will vie with one another, who shall give you the most to do; and I doubt not, but, with the Blessing of God, you may live happily enough.

YOUR mentioning my Sister, Madam, said I, interrupting her, is a Reprimand for my not having till now enquired about her; the Pleasure of seeing you, made me forget all other Concerns; but as I have told you all I had to say, I would now beg to see her. The poor Child, said she, has done nothing but cry since you left *Naples*; and I am sure this will be a joyful Day to her: I will leave you a Minute, and bring her with me when I return; I must prepare her for this unexpected Sight, the joyful Surprize might be otherwise dangerous to the dear little Creature, who is intirely wrapt up in her Sister *Henrietta*, for whose Safety, she has been for Hours every Day prostrate at our
Altar;

Altar; and tho' she obeys me with the greatest Chearfulness and Submission imaginable, in every thing else, yet neither my Commands nor Persuasions could keep her from going to the Chappel, by her self, from which she always came with her Eyes red and swelled with weeping, tho' she would not own it. This Account of my dear little Sister's Affection was very moving, and tho' I had not thought of her so often as she had of me, being constantly under Alarms and Fears for what was dearer to me than my Kindred, or even my Life; yet as I loved her tenderly, I was resolved to take Care of her Education, and when she was capable of assisting me in the Business I intended to follow, to take her out of the Convent; for, in my Father's Absence, as I thought it my Duty to take Care of her, so I imagined that I had a right to dispose of her, in the manner that would be most to her Advantage; not, however, without Madam *D'Allon's* Advice and Approbation; who at last returned, leading my Sister in her Hand; and indeed our Meeting was a very moving Scene. She was let into the Parlour where I was, and made but one Step from the Door, till she got me in her Arms, and I her in mine, where we remained
some

some Minutes in that inexpressible Transport, which the Ties of Blood inspire ; and tho' it might be expected, that one of my Years might have known how to moderate those natural Impulses of Affection, and to keep them within just Bounds ; yet I must own, that upon this Occasion, I was as little Mistress of myself, as the dear little *Flora* (my Sister's Name) from whose Eyes Streams of joyful Tears in a Moment forced their Passage, and in spite of all my Resolution, I felt the tender Drop come gliding down my Cheek. We remained fast lock'd in one another's Arms, for a considerable Time, without the Power of Speech ; and had not Madam *D'Allon*, who was not a little affected with this tender Interview, roused me from the pleasing Lethargy, in which I found myself wrapt, I know not how long it might have lasted. Come, my Children, said she, out of Compassion to your own Hearts, I must interrupt this Flow of natural Affection, lest it may prove prejudicial to your Health ; it is, however, no small Satisfaction to me to find, that I have Occasion to preach up Moderation to you in your Transports of Joy and Affection, on the Sight

of one another, rather than to blame your Coldness.

I IMMEDIATELY started from my Sister's Arms, and asked her pardon for my Incivility, in indulging too much the Motions of my Heart in her Presence; but as I had not been so much Mistress of my self as to moderate my first Transports, I hoped she would be so good as to attribute it to a natural and irresistible Impulse, which sometimes gets the better of the most staid and solid Persons. Don't imagine, my dear Child, answered she, that I am angry with you for such Demonstrations of a tender and affectionate Heart, and if I have interrupted your little Sister's and your soft Embraces, it was only from an Apprehension of the Danger that attends the giving too great a Loose to joyful Raptures, which, in a Girl of your Sister's Age, may set the Blood into so violent an Agitation that a Fever may be the Consequence.

AFTER returning thanks for this kind Precaution, I told her that as *Mirella's* Aunt was a discreet Woman, and that as I was commodiously, tho' not grandly, lodged at her House, I resolved to continue in it for some time;

time ; but I little dreamed at that Time that I was soon to be dragged from thence and thrown into a Jail as a notorious Thief.

My return to *Naples* was soon known all over the City, and as my Story had been the subject of Tea-Table Talk, the Ladies no sooner heard of my design of taking in Work, than I had it thrown in upon me from all quarters of the Town, more than we could, had we been twice as many Hands, accomplish, tho' *Mirella* surpassed any Thing that can be imagined, and I was not idle. We went on for ten Days with all imaginable pleasure, and got Money a-pace ; for some of our Customers paid double of what we demanded for our Work. But one Morning (O Heaven's ! how I tremble at the very Thought of it ?) just as we had ended Breakfast half a Dozen ill-looking Fellows, headed by an Officer of Justice, entered the House, and dragged not only *Mirella* and me to Prison, as Persons accused of Theft, but likewise her Aunt for harbouring us. The first Shock deprived me of the Use of Reason, and I seemed to be in a state of Stupidity, which made me insensible of what passed, I stared at those who spoke to me, but made them no answer,

answer, nor indeed could I get my Tongue to articulate any Word, tho' I often attempted it; this was a deplorable Situation, and what greatly augmented it, was, that when I came to be restored to the use of my Reason, and to be sensible of my Misery, I had neither *Mirrella* nor her Aunt to consult with, they having been put each of them into a sort of Dungeon by themselves. In this, as in all the Misfortunes of my Life, I had recourse to Heaven by Prayer; after which, I began to think what I had done to bring such a Misfortune upon me, but I in vain attempted to find out the Cause; not finding, after the strictest Examination, any thing upon which I could ground the least Conjecture; I therefore resolved, in a firm Confidence of my Innocency's soon being cleared up, not to torture my Brain about finding out this Mystery, and to wait with patience till it pleased those who had put me here, to let me know the Cause.

The End of the FIRST VOLUME.